The Damascus Psalm Fragment
Late Antique and Medieval Islamic Near East (LAMINE)

The new Oriental Institute series LAMINE aims to publish a variety of scholarly works, including monographs, edited volumes, critical text editions, translations, studies of corpora of documents—in short, any work that offers a significant contribution to understanding the Near East between roughly 200 and 1000 CE.
The Damascus Psalm Fragment
Middle Arabic and the Legacy of Old Ḥigāzī

by
Ahmad Al-Jallad

with a contribution by
Ronny Vollandt

2020

LAMINE 2
LATE ANTIQUE AND MEDIEVAL ISLAMIC NEAR EAST • NUMBER 2
THE ORIENTAL INSTITUTE OF THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO
CHICAGO, ILLINOIS
For Victor “Suggs” Jallad
my happy thought
# Table of Contents

Preface .................................................................................. ix

Abbreviations .......................................................................... xi

List of Tables and Figures ........................................................... xiii

Bibliography ........................................................................... xv

Contributions

1. The History of Arabic through Its Texts ................................. 1
   Ahmad Al-Jallad

2. The Psalm Fragment: Script, Phonology, and Morphology .......... 7
   Ahmad Al-Jallad

   Ahmad Al-Jallad

4. Old Arabic, Middle Arabic, and Old Ḥigāzī .................................. 57
   Ahmad Al-Jallad

   Ahmad Al-Jallad

Appendix 1

Beyond Arabic in Greek Letters: The Scribal and Translational Context of the Violet Fragment ......................... 93
   Ronny Vollandt

Appendix 2

Pre-Islamic Graeco-Arabic Texts ........................................... 111
   Ahmad Al-Jallad

Index ..................................................................................... 133
Preface

I have been thinking about the Damascus Psalm Fragment for nearly ten years. I was first introduced to the text and the great debates surrounding its date and linguistic register in Professor Wolfhart Heinrichs’ seminar on the History of the Arabic Languages. It was, at the time, the earliest Arabic text written in Greek letters, and as such, provided the clearest window into the pronunciation of Arabic in the first few Islamic centuries. The fragment formed the basis of a question that would guide my research for the next decade: what would the history of Arabic look like if we based it on documents such as these—early texts that exist free from the prescriptive influence of Classical Arabic norms? One article—and perhaps one of the most influential on me—centers this text in the quest for Arabic’s early history, M. C. A. Macdonald’s “Literacy and Identity in an Oral Environment.” In this excellent essay, Macdonald makes a compelling case for a pre-Islamic date of the fragment. Could it be that this text, so “Neo-Arabic” in its character, dated to a century before the spread of Islam? At the moment, there was only one other corpus of pre-Islamic Graeco-Arabic texts that could be compared to the document: the Arabic vocabulary in Greek transcription from the Petra Papyri. While these words and phrases did not provide enough linguistic material to establish with any certainty a relationship with the Psalm Fragment, they did prove conclusively that so-called “neo-Arabic” features, like the loss of final-short vowels, appeared before the Arab Conquests. The case for a pre-Islamic date seemed defensible.

The Psalm Fragment and the Petra Papyri brought into relief the value of transcriptions for the understanding of the history of Arabic. In 2013, I identified a large corpus of neglected material that could bear on this question - the copious transcriptions of pre-Islamic Arabic anthroponyms in Greek from the Levant dating to the early first millennium CE. These “Graeco-Arabica” have never been studied on their own terms and so had yet to contribute to the history of Arabic (morpho-)phonology (anthroponyms could provide little information about other aspects of morphology and syntax). I established a four-part project aiming to study this material in a comprehensive way: Part I “the southern Levant,” Part II “Palmyra,” Part III “Dura Europos, Hatra, and Miscellaneous,” and Part IV “The Damascus Psalm Fragment.” Part I has already appeared (Al-Jallad, Graeco-Arabica I); part II and III are still in preparation. This book grew out of my work on part IV.

I returned to the study of the Damascus Psalm Fragment after I completed a comprehensive study of the pre-Islamic Graeco-Arabic from the Levant, the Arabic names and terms in Greek transcription from the first Islamic century (from Nessana and Egypt), and a comprehensive study of the bilingual Greek-Safaitic texts known till the time. These provided an important context for situating the language and writing system of the fragment. While the text was certainly unique in the Islamic period, it found no counterpart, no relatives, in the pre-Islamic period either—in almost every measurable way, its writing system and language differed from the pre-Islamic Graeco-Arabica.

This book studies all aspects of the Damascus Psalm Fragment in microscopic detail in an attempt to understand the origin of its language, its writing system, and how it fits into Arabic’s linguistic history. The book views the language of the Damascus Psalm Fragment as
a bridge between the pre-Islamic and Islamic periods of Arabic. It reflects a dialect closely related to that of Quranic orthography and Umayyad period documents and transcriptions—Old Ḥīgāzī. From here, I offer a new hypothesis on the relationship between early forms of Arabic and the origins of what we conventionally call “Classical Arabic.”

The book concludes with two appendices. The first, by Professor Ronny Vollandt, covers the scribal and translational context of the Psalm Fragment, using these neglected dimensions to relate the text to other, relatively early Christian Arabic translations of the Bible. The second appendix collects bilingual Arabic (Safaitic)-Greek inscriptions in one place as a point of comparison with the Psalm Fragment. These texts are followed by a fresh commentary, modifying some readings and interpretations.

I first owe gratitude to Professor Ronny Vollandt for contributing his excellent chapter to this book. I thank the many readers who have given me helpful comments and corrections on this manuscript: Professor Michael C. A. Macdonald, Professor Holger Gzella, Professor Aaron Butts, Professor Ronny Vollandt, Karolina Jaworska, Dr. Marijn van Putten, Dr. Hythem Sidky, Dr. Benjamin Suchard, and Dr. Emily Cottrell.

Ahmad Al-Jallad
Columbus, Ohio
October 2019
Abbreviations

CE  Common Era
ca.  circa, about, approximately
CAr  Classical Arabic
ch(s).  chapter(s)
col(s).  column(s)
ed.  edition, editor
e.g.  exempli gratia, for example
esp.  especially
FS  Feminine singular
ibid.  ibidem, in the same place
i.e.  id est, that is
MS  Masculine singular
n(n)  note(s)
no(s).  number(s)
OCIANA  Online Corpus of the Inscriptions of Ancient North Arabia
P  plural (in verb)
PF  Damascus Psalm Fragment
QCT  Quranic Consonantal Text
S  strong verb
s.v.  sub verbo, under the word
trans.  translation, translator
v(v).  verse(s)
I-ʾ  initial hamzah verb
I-w  initial wāw verb
II-w/y  medial weak (hollow) verbs
III-ʾ  final hamzah verb
III-w/y  final weak verbs
1  first person
2  second person
3  third person
# List of Tables and Figures

| Table 1 | Namārah Inscription vocalized according to Classical Arabic phonology versus northern Old Arabic | 4 |
| Table 2 | A1 in light of later forms of Arabic | 5 |
| Table 3 | The vowel system of late Koīné Greek | 9 |
| Table 4 | Greek-Arabic correspondences in the orthography of the PF | 12 |
| Table 5 | The spelling of Arabic *u in Greek | 14 |
| Table 6 | The representation of reflexes of Arabic *ā in Greek | 15 |
| Table 7 | Noun patterns attested in the PF | 19 |
| Table 8 | Possible realizations of the 3ms clitic pronoun | 25 |
| Table 9 | Demonstratives | 26 |
| Table 10 | Relative pronoun | 26 |
| Table 11 | G-stem verbs attested in the PF | 29 |
| Table 12 | Mood inflection in the prefix conjugation | 30 |
| Table 13 | D-stem verbs | 31 |
| Table 14 | Suffix conjugation of the C-stem | 32 |
| Table 15 | Prefix conjugation of the C-stem | 32 |
| Table 16 | Suffix conjugation of the Gt-stem | 33 |
| Table 17 | Suffix conjugation of the N-stem | 33 |
| Table 18 | Suffix conjugation of the Q-stem | 33 |
| Table 19 | Comparison of Greek transcriptions methods in pre-Islamic inscriptions/papyri, first-Islamic-century papyri, and the PF | 43 |
| Table 20 | Comparison of III-weak verbs and the quality of *ā in the QCT an PF | 48 |
| Table 21 | Comparison of short vowel qualities in the pre-Islamic inscriptions/papyri, first-Islamic-century papyri, and the PF | 50 |
| Table 22 | The case system of the QCT | 63 |
| Table 23 | The mood system of the QCT | 65 |
| Table 24 | The legacy of Old Ḥigāzī in Arabic orthography | 72 |

**Map 1**

Political map of Arabia and the Middle East showing the tribes and kingdoms mentioned in inscription Jabal Riyām 2006–17

**Plate 1**

Photograph of the Damascus Psalm Fragment. STAATSBIBLIOTHEK ZU BERLIN—Preußischer Kulturbesitz, Orient abteilung, Mss simulata orientalia 6, fol. 60; 59

**Plate 2**

Photograph of the Damascus Psalm Fragment. STAATSBIBLIOTHEK ZU BERLIN—Preußischer Kulturbesitz, Orient abteilung, Mss simulata orientalia 6, fol. 58; 61


———. “Clues to How a Nabataean May Have Spoken from a Hismaic Inscription.” Forthcoming.


Bibliography


Thompson, Edward M. *An Introduction to Greek and Latin Palaeography*. Oxford: Clarendon, 1911.


———. “The Feminine Ending as a Diptote in the Qur’anic Consonantal Text and Its Implications for Proto-Arabic and Proto-Semitic.” Arabica 64 (2017): 93–120.


Chapter 1

The History of Arabic through Its Texts

Early Muslim society felt a degree of discomfort with the written word. Its highest form of literature—poetry—was oral, and writing it down was deemed unnatural. The Quran, widely regarded as Arabic’s first book, began as an oral text. According to tradition, the Caliph ʿUthmān faced considerable resistance when he decreed that it be put into a standardized written form. Even as late as the eighth century, a great debate raged: Was it permissible to commit to writing the Hadith, the oral sayings about the life and times of the Islamic Prophet? While its proponents won the day, it was a hard-fought battle, and the attitude of oral supremacy persisted. Writing was ultimately involved in teaching and lecturing, but it was always regarded as a supplementary tool. The written word could serve as a memory aid, but was certainly not the primary source of knowledge.

The Arab grammarians, in their description of the language, thus did not turn to the copious documents available at their time, nor did they draw on the conventions of the scribal schools or chancelleries. Rather, the Arabic that concerned them was its oral form—the language of Arabian tribesmen, in particular those who were in possession of “reliable” Arabic, and their oral literature. While the grammarians never made clear what their criterion for reliable Arabic was, it is safe to assume that they meant varieties that still inflected for nominal case and verbal mood. Although there are a few skeptical voices, most specialists regard the data contained in the corpus of Arabic grammatical literature as authentic examples of select eighth- and ninth-century vernacular usage.

The Arabic grammatical tradition was a synchronic endeavor, lacking an explicit historical dimension. Therefore, the Arabic documented and prescribed as correct in the late eighth and early ninth centuries was not chronologically fixed to that era. On the contrary, it was regarded as representative of the language of Arabia’s tribespeople from time immemorial, and it first experienced change once non-Arabic speakers began to acquire it following the Arab conquests. Within this conceptual framework, only two types of Arabic can exist—the pre-Islamic varieties of pure Arabic, characterized by a fully functioning nominal case system, and

---

1 Cook, “Opponents.”
2 See Schoeler, The Oral and the Written, on the relationship between the oral and written in early Islam; for a summary of these views and further ideas, see Schoeler, “Literacy and Memory.”
3 For an excellent overview of the Arabic grammatical tradition, see Versteegh, Landmarks in Linguistic Thought, vol. 3. On the methods of Sibawayh and his selection of data, see the thorough discussion in Carter, Sibawayhi.
4 Owens, A Linguistic History of Arabic, p. 93, for example, has argued that there are no pure data to be found in the Kitāb of Sibawayh and that everything he writes or observes is filtered through his grammatical thinking. This extreme view, however, remains a minority position.
5 In the literature these varieties are often referred to as fuṣḥā “purest,” Classical Arabic, or sometimes even Old Arabic.
Ahmad Al-Jallad

post-conquest varieties usually termed “Neo-Arabic,” the result of imperfect second-language acquisition, and characterized by a reduced morphology and substandard pronunciation.

Like so many of its inheritances from Muslim tradition, a certain distrust of the written is also a characteristic of the enterprise of Arabic philology and linguistics, and this has had a profound influence on the reconstruction of Arabic’s history. Modern scholars have generally taken for granted the antiquity and universality of the Arabic of the grammarians. Earlier written texts, such as the papyri from the seventh and early eighth centuries CE and the Quran, the earliest manuscripts of which precede the grammatical tradition by more than a century, are conventionally interpreted according to much later norms, without the need for justification. Any reader of these texts will notice that the oral component differs from the written in significant ways. To illustrate, consider the word ملّكه in Q66:6. All reading traditions instruct that this word should be pronounced as [malāʔikatun]; these traditions go back to the middle of the eighth century at the earliest, while the true seventh-century form is the written artifact, mlykh, lacking the final syllable tun. In the same vein, the word برو in Q60:4 is read unanimously as buraʔū, while at least two syllables are missing in the spelling. Despite the fact that the written in these cases is demonstrably older than the reading traditions, the oral is given default preference, and the differences are a priori reduced to orthographic convention. Indeed, most scholars have assumed that the language behind the most ancient component of the Quran, its Consonantal Text (QCT), is more or less identical to the language recited in the halls of Al-Azhar today. It is only in very recent years that the QCT has enjoyed study as an epigraphic document, interrogating the text for linguistic facts rather than assuming them. These efforts have led to a radically different view of the language of its composition.

In the same way, Arabic-language documentary texts from the first Islamic century are generally assumed to be “Classical Arabic.” And when they deviate, the irregularities are taken as examples of a diglossic situation comparable to the present day, where speakers of “Neo-Arabic” err in their writing of the Classical standard. Thus, these early texts are regarded as mixed between the two essential varieties of Arabic, the Classical language and Neo-Arabic, rather than representing a language variety in their own right. The anachronistic nature of this approach is rarely appreciated.

The distrust of the written and the timelessness of the oral have greatly reduced the value of the early Arabic documentary evidence. Ancient texts are forced into the model of Classical Arabic, thus losing any opportunity to contribute to our understanding of Arabic’s earliest

---

4 The earliest reading traditions date from the 730s, but most come from the late eighth and early ninth centuries; see Bell and Watt, Introduction to the Qur’ān, p. 49. On the transmission of the readings and their characteristic features, see Nasser, Transmission.

7 This approach is characterized by Diem’s articles on Arabic orthography (“Glimpses”; “arabischen Orthographie I, II, III”). Some of the Quranic reading traditions contain forms that more closely match the orthography of the texts, yet since the Arabic of the grammatical tradition is given the most weight, these are still interpreted as secondary. For example, the realization of the alif-maṣārah in the tradition of Warsh ʕan Nāfi‘ is [ē], a better fit for its spelling in the QCT as ى. Nevertheless, this is conceptualized as a secondary development, َā > ِā, the result of so-called imālah. Indeed, despite the graphic congruity, Diem, “arabischen Orthographie III,” insists that the realization of this glyph in the Quran was [ā]. For a convincing argument for an original ِā-value, see Van Putten, “Triphthongs.”

4 On this approach, see chapter 4.
The History of Arabic through Its Texts

stages independently. Consider Bellamy’s rendition of this fourth-century Levantine Arabic text, the Namārah inscription, into the standardized variety of the ninth century:

Reading:  
\[\text{ty npš mrʾlqyš br ʿmrw mlk ʾl-ʾrb}\]

Bellamy:  
\[\text{tī nafsu mriʔi l-qaysi bar ʿamrin maliki l-ʕarabi}\]

“This is the funerary monument of Mrʾlqys son of ʿmrw king of the Arabs”

The Namārah Inscription contains many features unknown in standard Classical Arabic, and rare in the works of the Arabic grammarians, such as the demonstrative \(\text{tī}\), the word \(\text{nafs}\), for funerary monument, and the adverbial particle \(\text{ʿkdy}\). Other aspects that are equally linguistically informative are overlooked, such as the fact that the definite article is written as \(\text{ʾl}\) in all contexts, even before coronal consonants: \(\text{ʾltg = ʔal-tāg}\) and not \(\text{at-tāg}\) or \(\text{ʾlšʿwb = ʔal-šuʕūb}\) rather than \(\text{aš-šuʕūb}\). While this is a spelling convention by the eighth century, how can we be certain it was simply that centuries earlier? After all, spelling conventions usually have their origin in an earlier stage of the language.

The filter of Classical Arabic creates an artificial uniformity across space and time. Differences in texts and genres are explained away as orthographic peculiarities or simply the result of writing an unwritten language. Beeston proclaims that the Namārah inscription and the grave inscription of Rbbl son of Hfʿm from Qaryat al-Fāw express a nearly identical idiom and are “drafted in what is recognizably almost pure ‘Classical Arabic.'” This view can only be maintained if one ignores the written text itself. If one takes the orthography seriously, as they were composed before there was an Arabic orthographic standard to imitate, the two texts differ in almost every comparable way.

The illusion of uniformity is no doubt aided by the defective nature of the Semitic writing systems. Most texts composed in a Semitic alphabet lend themselves to numerous interpretations. The absence of the graphic representation of short vowels has rendered most of the ancient epigraphic material silent on some of the major questions in Arabic historical

---

9 Bellamy, “A New Reading of the Namara Inscription.” The Namārah inscription, named after the area in southern Syria in which it was discovered, is the epitaph of a \(\text{mrʾlqyš br ʿmrw}\) (Mar-al-Qays son of ‘Amro), who is called “king of all the Arabs.” Dated to 328 ce, it is one of the earliest examples of Arabic prose written in the Nabataean script. For the most recent discussion of the text, see Macdonald’s contribution to Fiema et al., “Provincia Arabia.”

10 To illustrate this point, consider the case of English \text{night} \([\text{naɪt}]\), the orthography of which provides evidence for an earlier fricative, although it has been lost in pronunciation (cf. German \text{nacht}). On the history of English spelling, see Scragg, \text{English Spelling}.

11 On this practice, see Macdonald, “Written Word.” I would argue that it is precisely because Arabic was not associated with a single script that the spellings of the language in this earlier period are to be regarded as phonetic as there was no target orthography for the writer to imitate.

12 This inscription, in the Ancient South Arabian script but in a “North Arabian” idiom, comes from the excavations at Qaryat al-Fāw in south central Saudi Arabia, with an excellent photograph in al-Ansary, \text{Qaryat Al-Fau}. The text is undated, but scholars have speculated that it could be as old as the first century BCE. It has been discussed by a number of scholars, most notably, Beeston, “Nemara and Faw”; Robin, “arabie antique”; Macdonald, “Old Arabic”; Al-Jallad, “Genetic Background.”


14 For example, the grave epitaph of Qaryat al-Fāw has \text{mimation} and assimilates the coda of the article while these features are absent in the Namārah inscription. The vowel of the 3ms pronoun seems to be long, \text{hw}, in the former, while short or absent altogether in the latter, etc. On the features of this inscription and its classification, see Al-Jallad, “Genetic Background.”
linguistics—the fate of the Proto-Semitic case system, syllable structure, vowel quality, and so on. Moreover, scholarly transcription practices generally convey a great deal of uniformity where it is not found in the actual documents. The use of Classical Arabic transcription conventions such as \( \dot{d} \) and \( \breve{z} \) for Arabian glyphs representing the reflex of the same phonemes can imply that they were pronounced in the same way, although the scripts themselves offer no evidence for this.

One corpus has brought into relief the methodological pitfalls of reading ancient Arabic texts as Classical Arabic—the so-called pre-Islamic Graeco-Arabica. From the turn of the Common Era to the sixth century CE, a copious amount of Arabic is attested in the form of anthroponyms transcribed in Greek from southern Syria and Jordan. These documents not only provide data about the vowels, but shed important light on the realization of the consonants and morphophonology. But only if one asks the right questions.

The thousands of Greek transcriptions, many informal graffiti, allow the careful linguist to form a detailed picture of Old Arabic phonology. From these we learn, for example, that the coda of the definite article did not in fact originally assimilate to coronals, that the most common realization of the high vowels was [o] and [e] rather than [u] and [i], final short high vowels had dropped off, and that the entire emphatic series was voiceless. These texts come from the same region and the same time period as the Namārah Inscription and therefore would naturally be the first port of call for the vocalization of this text, rather than the Arabic documented in the eighth and ninth centuries by grammarians in Iraq.

### Table 1. Namārah Inscription vocalized according to Classical Arabic phonology versus northern Old Arabic

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Classicized Namārah Inscription (Bellamy, “A New Reading of the Namara Inscription”)</th>
<th>Northern Old Arabic vocalization</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>tī nafsu mriʔi l-qaysi BAR ʕamrin maliki l-ʕarabi kulli-hi, ḏū ʔasara t-tāḡa</td>
<td>tī nap’s mar-ʔal-qays BAR ʕamro malk ʔal-ʕarab koll-ah, ḏū ʔasara ʔal-tāḡa</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Until 2015, the Damascus Psalm Fragment was regarded as the earliest example of the Arabic prose written in Greek letters. In the fall of 2014, my colleague and collaborator Ali al-Manaser shared with me the photograph of a so-far unique Greek graffito. The photograph was taken by Professor Sabri al-Abbadi in the early 2000s in the northeastern Jordanian Ḥarrah. Since then, it had been circulated among Hellenists, who regarded it as garbled nonsense by a barely literate person. As I examined the text, the last two lines immediately struck me. They contained a variant of a phrase I had encountered many times, and in many forms, in the Safaitic inscriptions: \( w \ rʿy \ bql \ b-knn \) “and he pastured on fresh herbage during Kānūn.” This Graeco-Arabic rendition, however, gives precious information not contained in the consonantal Safaitic writing: \( \alpha\omicron\upsilon\upsilon\alpha \upsilon \rhoaw \varsigma \alpha \varsigma \lambda \beta \chi \alpha \nu\omicron\upsilon\nu[v] = [wa yirʕaw baqla bi-kānūn] \) “and they pastured on fresh herbage during Kānūn.” The prefix conjugation contained an [i] vowel, \( yirʕaw \) rather than Classical Arabic \( yarʕaw \). The accusative case was simply [a] or [ā], \( baqla/baqlā \), without nunation—a context form not known from Classical Arabic. Earlier in the

---

15 For a comprehensive discussion of the linguistic features of pre-Islamic Arabic transcribed in Greek, see Al-Jallad, “Graeco-Arabica I.”
16 Earlier examples of isolated words and anthroponyms have been published; see, for example, the study of Isserlin, “Nessana Papyri.”
inscription, the verb “he came,” Classical Arabic ʔatā, is spelled αθαοα [ʔatawa], a form not
known from Classical or Modern Arabic but hinted at in Arabic orthography. On paleographic
grounds, this inscription predates the fourth century ce.

Table 2. A1 in light of later forms of Arabic

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>A117</th>
<th>Safaitic</th>
<th>Classical Arabic Orthography</th>
<th>Classical Arabic</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>αθαοα</td>
<td>ʾtw/ʾty</td>
<td>ʾj ʾty</td>
<td>ʔatā</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>βακλα</td>
<td>bql (acc.)</td>
<td>ʾla &lt;bqlʾ&gt;</td>
<td>baqlan</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ειραυ</td>
<td>yrʾ</td>
<td>ʾrʾ &lt;yrʾwʾ&gt;</td>
<td>yarʾaw</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

This text helps confirm what Safaitic18 and Arabic orthography already strongly implied:
the orthography of Arabic has its basis in a real dialect, and so the practice of reading all texts
prior to the grammatical tradition as Classical Arabic is indefensible. This realization presents
a new question: When did these phonetic spellings become orthographic conventions?

The careful and dispassionate study of Arabia’s ancient epigraphy reveals a picture quite
dissimilar from that presented in Muslim historical sources. The Arabic of the grammarians
is not met with; instead, the peninsula displays a dazzling degree of linguistic diversity. The
Old Arabic dialects differ in ways not recorded by the grammarians, while features that figure
prominently in the grammatical manuals are nowhere to be found. Consider nunation
(tanwīn)—this is a standard feature of Classical Arabic, but in the consonantal South Semitic
writing systems, Greek transcriptions, and the Graeco-Arabic inscription A1, the feature is
completely absent. While the absence of nunation in Arabic orthography is usually written
off as a convention, there is no reason to assume such conventions when Arabic is written in
other scripts, much less before the development of the Arabic script itself. These attestations
can mean only one thing: nunation had disappeared in most forms of Old Arabic.

The study of the pre-Islamic epigraphic record brings into relief a methodological flaw
in the study of early Islamic documents. How can we be sure that the earliest Islamic Arabic
texts, like the administrative papyri from the first Islamic century or the QCT, were aiming at
Classical Arabic, especially considering that no evidence for such a standard is found in the
pre-Islamic period? How can we know, for example, that a spelling such as فانفعل in a first-cen-
tury AH document was meant to be pronounced as fanfaʕala as in Classical Arabic, rather than
fa-ʔanfaʕel as in the Psalm Fragment?19 Can we be certain that early attestations of “sub-stan-
dard” forms like lam yakūn are hypercorrect literary syntagms rather than a reflection of living
speech? Judgments of Arabic’s earliest written documents have proceeded on the assumption
that the Classical Arabic standard is timeless, but the facts now show the opposite.

The previous pages have made the case against privileging the language of the Arabic
grammatical tradition or the modern spoken dialects over written testimonies of the past.
While this is relatively uncontroversial in the pre-Islamic period, I would argue that the same

17 The editio princeps of this text is Al-Jallad and al-Manaser, “New Epigraphica I,” which is re-edited in appen-
dix 2 of this book.
18 For example, Safaitic, which does not employ vowel letters, indicates that III-y/w verbs terminated in a con-
sonant, ʾty “he came,” bny “he built,” etc., corresponding to the alif-maqṣūrah in standard Arabic orthography.
See Al-Jallad, Outline, pp. 37–39, on the orthography of Safaitic.
19 Compare with Psalm Fragment v. 57, ανκαλεβου [ʔanqalebū] “they rebelled.”
principle is true for early Islamic texts as well. This book investigates Arabic’s transformative historical phase, the passage from the pre-Islamic to the Islamic period, through a new approach. I ask: What would Arabic’s history look like if we wrote it based on the documentary evidence rather than exclusively the oral? I frame this question through the linguistic investigation of the Damascus Psalm Fragment (PF)—the longest Arabic text composed in Greek letters and the earliest from the Islamic period. This document affords us a glimpse of the phonology and morphology of the Arabic of its time—likely the mid- to late ninth century but possibly earlier. More importantly, a study of its structure and raison d’être shows that its language must be regarded as the translation register of the vernacular, rather than the type of Middle Arabic described by Blau, where features from Classical Arabic mix with later varieties. Its linguistic features, I argue, cast important light on the pre-grammarian Arabic of the early conquests, and indeed on the dialect from which it likely sprung: Old Ḥigāzī.

The book begins with a detailed linguistic description of the PF on its own terms. Using the facts gained from this investigation, we will enter a discussion on its date, transcription system, and purpose. As a witness of early vernacular Arabic, we then move to understand its relationship with the early Arabic papyri, characterized by Blau as early Muslim Middle Arabic, and the QCT. Here, I fully articulate the hypothesis of Old Ḥigāzī, an idea that I have presented in a few earlier works, and outline a scenario for the emergence of standard Classical Arabic as the literary language of the late eighth century and beyond.

---

21 Blau, Emergence, pp. 123–32.
Chapter 2

The Psalm Fragment: Script, Phonology, and Morphology

In 1900, Bruno Violet discovered in a polyglot depository of no-longer-used books in the Umayyad Mosque of Damascus a parchment bifolium containing two, thirty-three-line columns of facing Greek texts. This document, unique among the others reported in the discovery, is a literal translation of Psalm 77, according to the LXX (78 in the Masoretic tradition), into Arabic written in Greek letters. The editio princeps was published in 1901, with a tracing of the text from the original. The document was sent for further study to Germany in 1903 and was lost on its return journey to Damascus in 1909. Violet announced his intentions to publish the photograph of the PF at a future date and did so in a Berichtigter Sonderabzug of the original article. The publication is extremely rare; I had the privilege of studying a xerox of Professor H. Gzella’s personal copy, which he kindly supplied. Unfortunately, the published photographs are of such low quality that they are virtually useless for verifying the transcription of the text. The study of the PF experienced a major advance with the rediscovery of the original photographs of the document, published by Mavroudi in 1999. After four years of inquiry, she was able to locate them in the Orientabteilung of the Staatsbibliothek zu Berlin, Preussischer Kulturbesitz. The photographs reveal that the document was damaged in the time between Violet’s transcription and its photographing, as some sections that are present in Violet’s copy are missing in the surviving images.

The document consists of four folios, numbered 58–61 by authorities in Damascus. The neatness of the surviving folios varies, but as Macdonald emphasizes, it is not a tidy production. The separation of the columns is very irregular, and in each folio the text runs into the middle margin. Only the verso of the second leaf (fol. 60) is ruled. The text is written in the uncial hand, in a script known as Maiuscula Ogivalis Inclinata, and it consistently employs accents and breathing marks in the Greek component. In addition to this, it uses the elongated iota in the nomen sacrum ИΗΛ = Іσραήλ (v. 21) and in the name Jacob, Їακѡ̂β = Іακѡ̂β (v. 21). For a full description of the artifact, see appendix 1.

---

22 The Damascus Psalm Fragment is sometimes called the Violet fragment in honor of its discoverer; see Bandt and Rattmann, “Die Damaskusreise Bruno Violets,” on the history of the fragment’s discovery.
23 The Arabic text is often called a gloss, but while the translation follows closely the Greek, it is not a word-for-word gloss of the sort usually found interlinearly in early Quranic translations and in Western glosses of the Bible.
25 Call number MS Or. sim. 6.
26 Mavroudi, “Arabic Words in Greek,” p. 322.
27 Macdonald, Literacy and Identity, 1:100.
28 I thank Ronny Vollandt for this information.
Previous Studies

Violet’s original edition remains the most comprehensive. A description of the document and the circumstances of its discovery are followed by a careful tracing of both the Greek and Arabic language columns. The Arabic is rendered into Arabic letters and then given an idiomatic translation into Classical Arabic so that the reader can compare the linguistic differences between the two. Violet’s reconstruction is based on the translation of Abdallah ibn al-Faḍl, the tenth-century Melkite Christian, available to him in print form. This translation is related to the one found in the PF but not identical to it. In cols. 425–41, Violet discusses the transcription system and speculates on the *raison d’être* of the document. The text was re-edited by Kahle in 1904, based on his work with the actual document. His study re-arranged the Greek into an interlinear gloss, with a few philological notes. Kahle did not re-edit the entire fragment, but only those parts that remained substantially intact. Its study was taken up again by Blau, nearly a century later, in his handbook on early Middle Arabic. Following Kahle, it is a limited re-edition, covering verses 20–30 and 56–60. Blau uses the document in formulating generalizations about the grammar of early Middle Arabic, so that many of the notes on its linguistic features are to be found in pages 29–57 of his book. The document’s linguistic significance was further recognized and discussed by Haddad, Corriente, and most recently Petrantoni. Corriente provides linguistic and philological notes on almost every verse and enters a lengthy discussion on the document’s importance for the development of the modern dialects of Arabic, an issue I will take up later in this book. Hopkins makes extensive use of the linguistic features of the PF in his grammar of early Arabic, but does not offer an explicit opinion about its origin or register. Mavroudi published the re-discovered photographs and offered a paleographic dating of the text.

The previous studies remark in various detail on the linguistic character of the PF, but all treat it in one way or another as dependent upon conventionalized Classical Arabic. For this reason perhaps, no systematic study of its language or writing system, on its own terms, has yet been carried out. This will be the goal of the present chapter.

The Writing System

The Arabo-Greek script of the PF operates according to the following orthographic principles: every Arabic phoneme is represented by a single Greek letter; no consonantal digraphs are employed in the representation of the consonants, and the vowels are represented by their closest Greek equivalents. The Arabic is represented phonetically, with full notation of allophony.

---

29 See Vollandt (appendix 1) for details on the translation method.
30 Kahle, *Die arabischen Bibelübersetzungen*.
32 Haddad, “La phonétique.”
33 Corriente, “Psalter Fragment.”
34 Petrantoni, “traslitterazione.”
35 Hopkins, *Studies in the Grammar of Early Arabic*.
36 Mavroudi, “Arabic Words in Greek,” pp. 342–45, for the plates of the PF.
Arabic phonemes for which there are no direct Greek equivalents are approximated first by manner and then by place. When a Greek phoneme has two conditioned allophones, it can be used to approximate an Arabic consonantal equivalent of only one of those, without reproducing the conditioning environment. To illustrate, Greek Chi is realized as [ç] following an i/e-vowel, but as [x] in other contexts. The transcription system draws on this polyphony to transcribe Arabic ḫ and ḥ in all situations, such as ελσιχεβ [el-siḥēb], even though this environment in Greek would trigger a palatal fricative [ç]. This demonstrates that the transcription system was conventional rather than being completely spontaneous based on the rules of Greek spelling.\(^{37}\)

**Orthography**

The spelling conventions employed in this text suggest that it was based on a late Koiné Greek pronunciation (> fourth century CE). Vowel-length distinction and aspiration were most likely lost, and the formerly aspirated consonants ϕ, θ, and χ were now pronounced as [f], [θ], and [x]/[ç], respectively. The voiced stops β, δ, and γ also became fricatives [β], [ð], and [ɣ]/[ʝ]. The pitch accent of Classical Greek was realized as stress.\(^{38}\) These facts form the basis of the Arabo-Greek script used in this document.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Front</th>
<th>Back</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>unrounded</td>
<td>rounded</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>closed</td>
<td>closed</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[i], [ε], [η]</td>
<td>[y], [o], [υ]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>mid</td>
<td>mid</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[e], [αι]</td>
<td>[o], [ω]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>open</td>
<td>open</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>[a], [α]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Vowel Length and Stress**

Vowel length is most often represented by an acute accent or a circumflex on digraphs. Thus, [α] renders long [ā], long [ē] by [ε], long [ι] by [i], and long [ũ] by oũ. The scribe is not perfectly consistent, and about half the time the accents are ignored. Stressed short vowels are also sometimes represented by an acute, so αφσέλ /ʔafsél/ “he abhorred” (v. 59).

**The Elongated Iota**

The elongated iota with a rough-breathing mark, represented in transcription here with <j>, is used to represent word-initial [(ʔ)i] and the glide [y], possibly with a following [i] vowel. This practice distinguishes its consonantal value from the [i] vowel, for which the normal Iota

---

\(^{37}\) This is markedly different in the spontaneous transcriptions of Arabic in Greek in the garā’id literature of Sicily, see Agius, *Siculo Arabic*, p. 415 and the discussion in “The Nature of the Transcription System” in chapter 3.

\(^{38}\) On the historical phonology of Koiné Greek, see Brixhe, “Linguistic Diversity in Asia Minor” and Allen, *Vox Graeca*. 
is used, and seems another indication of an established scribal tradition of rendering Arabic in the Greek script.

**Hypsilon and the Rough Breathing**

Hypsilon (Ypsilon with the rough breathing, ὑ) is used to represent the consonant [h] and the consonant+vowel sequence [hu]. In two isolated cases, the rough breathing is placed on a vowel to represent a combination of [h] and a vowel: καδσό [qadsoh] or [qads-ho] and ἁ (δα) [hadjā] (both in v. 54).

**Gemination**

Gemination is usually represented by the doubling of the consonant, but in word-final position and with the glides [y] and [w], it is not represented graphically: ηούεμει, Car yuwyiyi; κουετό, Car kwuat-uh; λεγαλ, Car laṣall (pause); ελ-ραβ, Car ar-rabb (pause). The non-representation of geminate and word-final glides is common to the pre-Islamic Graeco-Arabica as well, and so it probably should not be used for the simplification of geminates. Their non-representation may be due to the Greek writing system—two Iotas and two sequences of Omicron-Ypsilon do not seem to convey the idea of gemination. The matter of word-final geminates is more difficult to interpret. It may be the case that word-final position caused degemination or that the acoustic difference between word-final and word-medial geminates caused the scribe to interpret the latter as single consonants.\(^\text{39}\)

**Word/Syllable Dividers**

The scribe inconsistently uses a single dot to separate words and syllables:

**Words**

\begin{verbatim}
v. 29: φα•ακελου•οα•χεβιγου•γεδ//δα• [fa•ʔakelū•wa•šebiʕū•ǧeddā] “they ate and were completely sated”
\end{verbatim}

**Syllables**

\begin{verbatim}
v. 28: φα•οα•καγ•ατ [fa•wa•qa•ʕat] “and it fell”
\end{verbatim}

**The Influence of Arabic Orthography**

Arabic orthography does not seem to be an influencing factor in the transcription system. Prepositions that are written separately in Arabic are proclitic in the PF: φιλβαχερ [filbašer] “among man” versus في البلد. The representation of the consonants is guided by phonetic similarity rather than the similarity of glyphs in the Arabic script; for example, sin is represented...
by Sigma while Chi transcribes šīn. Gemination, for the most part, is indicated by writing the consonant twice. The only case in which the influence of Arabic orthography might be seen is the uniform writing of the definite article as ελ, the coda of which remains unassimilated before coronals. But considering that patterns from Arabic orthography are not found elsewhere, we might entertain the possibility that this reflects a phonetic reality (see “Linguistic Features” in chapter 3). The representation of the tā-marbūṭah with Hyphasis cannot be regarded as an imitation of Arabic orthography, but likely reflects a pronunciation with a true [h]. This is the pronunciation in Classical Arabic, despite the fact that Western Arabists tend to transcribe the ending simply as a, and of many Arabic dialects, both modern and ancient (see “Nominal Morphology: The Feminine Ending” in chapter 2).

---

40 Phonetic spelling of this sort is typical of early Judaeo-Arabic, while Classical Judaeo-Arabic is based more on Arabic orthography. For example, ḍ was written with Daleth in early Judaeo-Arabic but in the classical period, Tsade with a superscribed dot represents the phoneme, an imitation of the Arabic glyph ض; see Blau and Hopkins, “On Early Judaeo-Arabic Orthography”; Khan, “Orthography and Reading.”

41 Note also that in early Judaeo-Arabic, which employs phonetic writing, the assimilation of the article is represented graphically, so אשמס "the sun" = aššams (الشمس); Khan, “Orthography and Reading.”
Table 4. Greek-Arabic correspondences in the orthography of the PF

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek</th>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>Greek</th>
<th>Arabic</th>
<th>Greek</th>
<th>Arabic</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>α</td>
<td>[a], [ā]</td>
<td>ν</td>
<td>[n]</td>
<td>β</td>
<td>[b]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>γ</td>
<td>[ɣ], [ɣ]</td>
<td>δ</td>
<td>[d]</td>
<td>ρ</td>
<td>[r]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ε</td>
<td>[e]</td>
<td>η</td>
<td>[i]</td>
<td>θ</td>
<td>[l]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ζ</td>
<td>[z]</td>
<td>ι</td>
<td>[i]</td>
<td>ϕ</td>
<td>[f]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>η</td>
<td>[i]</td>
<td>ι</td>
<td>[i]</td>
<td>χ</td>
<td>[h]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ζ</td>
<td>[k]</td>
<td>ι</td>
<td>[i]</td>
<td>ψ</td>
<td>NA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>λ</td>
<td>[l]</td>
<td>ω</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>μ</td>
<td>[m]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>μ</td>
<td>[y]</td>
<td>υ</td>
<td>[u]</td>
<td>ξ</td>
<td>NA</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ζ</td>
<td>[ʔi]</td>
<td>ζ</td>
<td>[ʔi]</td>
<td>ψ</td>
<td>[y(υ)]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

See also the script charts in Violet, “Psalms fragment”; Kahle, Die Arabischen Bibelübersetzungen; Blau, Handbook.
Linguistic Description

Phonology

Short Vowels

The three short vowels of Old Arabic—*u, *i, and *a—are kept separate, and each vowel has two allophones.

*a

Etymological short *a is realized as ε = [e] unless it is contiguous with s, d, t, z, q, h, g, and then it is realized as [a] = α; raising is sometimes blocked by the labials, b, f, m, w, but this is not consistent. One may entertain the possibility that the realization of *a was closer to [æ] in non-backed environments, and it was approximated freely with Alpha and Epsilon. Examples:


The pharyngeals ʕ and ḥ block raising when preceding the *a but not following it, compare: μυγνεχαὑ [muǧneḥah] “winged” to φατεχ [fateḥ] “he opened” < *fataḥa; γαλα [ʕalā] “on” to εχτεγαλετ [ʔešteʕalet] “it kindled.”

Word-initial *a often remains [a], for example, ατε [ʔatē] “he came” rather than **ετε. Its shift to ε seems to be motivated in some cases by contact with a sibilant: εσκεν [ʔesken] “he dwelt” < *ʔaskana and εχτεγαλετ [ʔešteʕalet] “it kindled” < *ʔaštaʕalat, a sound change also attested in Aramaic.

*i

Etymological short *i remains intact in all environments and is rendered by ι and η = [i]. The sequence [yi] is possibly written with a single elongated iota with rough breathing in two cases: μάϳδεὑ [māyideh] “table” < *māyidatu; αβαϳὑμ [ābāyihum] “their fathers” < *ʔaʔbāyihum. On the other hand, it is possible that *i was syncopated in this environment, yielding the long diphthong āy. The latter hypothesis is perhaps supported by the spelling...

---

44 Blau, Handbook, p. 29, regards the shift of a > e as more or less random; Corriente, “Psalter Fragment,” does not remark further on this phenomenon, but correctly dismisses Haddad’s, “La phonétique,” attribution of it completely to Syriac influence.
45 Reconstructed forms are Proto-Arabic.
46 Corriente, “Psalter Fragment,” p. 304, correctly rejects Blau’s Handbook, p. 69, suggestion that the diphthong of μάϳδεὑ be vocalized as [mīda], as diphthongs are completely preserved in the text (“Phonology: Diphthongs” in chapter 2).
of the word μελεικε. If the use of the short Iota is the result of carelessness, then it could suggest that the present sequence was in fact a diphthong rather than a triphthong, that is, [melēike] and not [melēyike]. If the Iota here simply reflects the glide, then we can posit the loss of the short *i in an open syllable after the stressed long *ā: *malāyikah > *malēyikah > *malēykah > melēykeh.

In closed syllables, *i is rendered by Iota, while in open syllables it tends to be rendered by Eta (see “Nominal Morphology: Prepositions” in chapter 2). This may suggest a slight qualitative difference between the two environments, perhaps a tense versus lax distinction.

*u

The value of short *u is dependent upon the phonetic interpretation of Ypsilon. The phoneme is most often written with Ypsilon in unstressed environments and Omicron-Ypsilon in stressed environments:

Table 5. The spelling of Arabic *u in Greek

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Stressed</th>
<th>Unstressed</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>χουβζ /ḫúbz/</td>
<td>λυχουμ /luḥum/</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ψουγτι /yúʕṭi/</td>
<td>τυραβ /turáb/</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ψουγδεμου /yúʕdemū/</td>
<td>γαλειὑμ /ʕalēyhum/</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

This could suggest that Ypsilon and Omicron-Ypsilon represented different allophones of *u, and that in unstressed environments the vowel was reduced, perhaps to the lax [ʊ]. Evidence for reduction might be found in the spelling τηουρ [ṭiyūr] from *ṭuyūr, where the unstressed vowel assimilates to the following glide. The single example of unstressed /u/ written with Omicron-Ypsilon occurs after β, βουχουρ [buḥūr], which could reflect progressive assimilation of the vowel to a more rounded quality. What this reduced value of Ypsilon might have been is impossible to know, but synchronically it is clear that [ʊ] and [u] were spelled with ou, while [u] was represented with Ypsilon. This distinction parallels the Iota-Eta pattern for the representation of *i.

Long Vowels

*i* and *ū*

Both long ī (= i and η) and ū (= ou) remain stable in all environments and do not seem to have conditioned allophones.

*ā*

The shift of *ā to [e] follows the same pattern as the raising of short *a to [e].

47 Dr. B. Suchard informs me that a similar phenomenon seems to be at play in the Roman play *Poenulus*, which contains transcriptions of spoken Punic. There, Ypsilon is used to represent reduced vowels. I thank him for this information.
Table 6. The representation of reflexes of Arabic *ā in Greek

<p>| | |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ē (-ē)</td>
<td>ā (-á)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σέλετ [sēlet]</td>
<td>φάδατ [fādat]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ελάσεβ [el-sāb]</td>
<td>μάφδευ [māyideh]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἀτε [atē]</td>
<td>ελναρ [el-nār]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>χήμ [hiyēm]</td>
<td>γαλα [Γάλα]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>γεβ [gēb]</td>
<td>χαλασυ [καλασ-υ]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κεν [kēn]</td>
<td>αβοαβ [ʔabwāb]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ἱλε [hile]</td>
<td>ελεμα [ελ-σμά]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The Diphthongs

As Corriente correctly observed, the diphthongs obtain in the dialect of this document.48

*aw

There can be no doubt that *aw was preserved as it is consistently spelled with Alpha-Ypsilon: αυραθ [ʔawrat] “he caused to inherit”; ελκαυς [el-qaws] “the bow”; φαυκ [fawq] “above”; χαυλ [ʔawl] “around.” The first mora of the diphthong is raised to [e] when the conditions for *a > e apply: αβτελευ [abtelew] “they tempted”; λεγεμέλλευ [leýteméllew] “in order that they be sated”; οελευδιεὑ [wel-ʔewdiyeh] “the valleys.”

*ay

The diphthong *ay is also preserved in all environments. The coda is in all cases but one spelled with the elogated iota, clearly indicating a consonantal value. Two allophones are apparent, the first with the raising of the first mora to [e], written with Epsilon, and the second preserving the original [a], written with Alpha. The first value is attested four times and the second once: γαλεϳὑμ [ʔaley-hum] “upon them”; τεϳμ(αν) [teyman] “south wind,” but χαϳμετ [καλασ-υ] “tent of.”49 These examples are not enough to discover a distribution.

48 Corriente, “Psalter Fragment,” p. 304. Note also that there is no evidence for the collapse of diphthongs in the pre-Islamic period Al-Jallad, “Graeco-Arabica I,” §4.2.4; and in the Greek transcriptions of the first Islamic century, the diphthongs clearly obtain” Al-Jallad, “Arabic of the Islamic Conquests,” pp. 422–23. In the latter case, the diphthong [ay], which had no equivalent in Greek, was spelled sometimes explicitly, e.g., Καείς [ʔays].

49 While Corriente, “Psalter Fragment,” claims that the value of Epsilon-Iota cannot be ascertained because it is used to represented both the etymological diphthong and [i], this misses the fact that the diphthong is almost always spelled with the elongated aspirated iota, while the two cases in which Epsilon-Iota represent an i-class vowel (χειγβὑετ and jουῦετ), the short iota is used.
The Triphthongs

*awa and *aya

Both of the Proto-Arabic triphthongs have collapsed to long ā, as in Classical Arabic, as opposed to Old Arabic and the QCT.50 The phonetic realization of ā is determined by the rules for raising *ā to ē; thus, we have ατε [ʔatē] < *ʔatawa “he came” versus γαττα [ġaṭṭā] < *gaṭṭaya “he covered.” The triphthong in medial-weak roots has also collapsed to [ā] and is realized as [ā] or [ē], depending on the environment.51

In addition to these, the sequence āy in word-final position is also realized as [ā]. This change agrees with Classical Arabic and the QCT against Old Arabic, ελσεμα [el-semā] < *samāyun.52 The disappearance of the glide probably went through the intermediate stage found in Classical Arabic, where it shifts to ʔ in this environment, and was then lost together with the etymological glottal stop.

Consonants

Stops and Interdentals

The voiceless dental-alveolar stop *t and interdental *ṯ have not merged, μιθλ [miṯl] “like” versus ατε [ʔatē] “he came.” The status of the voiced interdental ḍ is unclear, as Greek has no way of distinguishing the sound from d in transcription. While it stands to reason that [ḏ] would survive if [ṯ] did, early Christian Arabic documents give some evidence that *ḏ and *d merged to [d] independently of the *ṯ-*t merger.53 Interestingly, the same phenomenon is witnessed over a millennium earlier in the Old Arabic of the Hismaic inscriptions, where one occasionally encounters etymological ḍ spelled with d, while there is no evidence for the loss of the voiceless interdental.54

The Velar and Pharyngeal Fricatives

In Maltese and Cypriot Arabic, both dialects separated from the mainland in early times, the velar fricatives ḥ and ḡ have merged with their pharyngeal counterparts to the pharyngeal value.55 At least in the case of Maltese, this sound change seems to post-date the isolation of

50 See Van Putten, “Triphthongs,” on the outcome of triphthongs in the QCT; in Safaitic, see Al-Jallad, Outline, p. 121, and on the issue in a broader Arabic context, see Al-Jallad, “Genetic Background,” §3.1.
51 Verbs of this class are reconstructed with two types of medial triphthongs: *qawuma “he arose” and *zay-ida “he increased”; these collapsed in Arabic, giving rise to two stems depending on the stress, *qawuma > qāma but *qawūmtu “I arose” > qumtu; *zāyida > zāda but *zayīdtu “I increased” > zidtu, Bauer, “Semitischen Grammatik,” p. 111. See Van Putten, “Triphthongs,” pp. 49–50, on medial triphthongs in the QCT, Al-Jallad, Outline, pp. 119–20, for Safaitic, and Voigt, Die infermen Verbaltypen, pp. 142–48, for a general overview for Ar-abic. It is clear that Rabin’s (Ancient West-Arabian, pp. 110–11) idea that medial-weak verbs contained a fourth Proto-Semitic monophthong *ē is untenable.
52 For a discussion on this change, see Al-Jallad, “Genetic Background,” pp. 11–12.
54 For a few examples, see King, Hismaic, §3.2a. Ugaritic experiences the same pattern of merger, Huehnergard, An Introduction to Ugaritic, p. 26.
55 In Cypriot Arabic, however, ḡ and ḥ merge to ḥ, probably under the influence of Greek. The mergers of the pharyngeal and velar fricatives occurred in Aramaic and Hebrew reading traditions as well; see the conclusive
that dialect from the mainland, as some dialects of Gozo apparently maintain a distinction between ǧ and s.56 It is impossible to determine whether this merger took place in the PF, as both pairs are represented by a single set of glyphs.

The Status of ǧīm

All pre-Islamic attestations of Arabic *g make use of Greek Gamma, but in the early Islamic period, transcriptions with yi begin to emerge, suggesting a palatal pronunciation.57 Coptic transcriptions from the eighth and ninth centuries indicate that an affricate pronunciation was present in Egypt.58 A palatal- or velar-stop realization was also present in the early Levantine dialects.59 The exact realization of *g in the PF is impossible to untangle. Gamma in this system of transcription has clearly advanced to the stage of a voiced palatal fricative before high vowels. If voice was given preference over place and manner, then it would be suitable for the transcription of [g]. However, if place and manner were more salient, then one would expect the transcription of [g] with Kappa. The same arguments would support the transcription of the sound were it [ǧ] or even [ž], which is common to urban Levantine dialects today. Thus, I will transcribe *g in the PF as ǧ for purely conventional purposes.

The Status of šīn

The equivalent of Arabic [š] is represented with Chi, which at first impression suggests a pronunciation similar to that described by Sibawayh, an ich-laut [ç]. However, since no exact equivalent of [ʃ] existed in Greek, Chi, pronounced as [ç], would have certainly been the closest approximation.60 As such, the palato-alveolar sibilant realization, common to many modern dialects of Arabic and the conventional pronunciation of Classical Arabic, cannot be ruled out. I employ the neutral š transcription of the sound.

The ṣād

The ṣād is transcribed with Sigma, as was the practice in pre-Islamic times and, with the exception of a few post-conquest Nessana spellings, in the first Islamic century as well. While I have argued that the early ṣād was an affricate in Arabic,61 the ṣād of this document was more

---

56 Stumme, *Maltesische Studien*, 79–81, was the first to observe the merger of the pharyngeal and velar fricatives in Maltese. Recently, Dr. M. Klimiuk and M. Lipnicka discovered a dialect in Gozo that retained the Old Arabic distinction between these phonemes, indicating that the aforementioned merger was something that happened at the post-Proto-Maltese stage. Their results were presented at the AIDA 2017 meeting, entitled “Preliminary Remarks on the Gozitan Dialect of Għarb, Malta.”

57 For example, ɣaʕfar for [gaʕfar]; on this phenomenon, see Al-Jallad, “Arabic of the Islamic Conquests.”


59 Some loans into Western Neo-Aramaic from Arabic reflect an original [g] pronunciation, ǧmōšča “people” < Arabic ġamāʕah; see Arnold and Behnstedt, *Qalamūn*, p. 53.

60 While Greek transcriptions of Aramaic and Phoenician use Sigma for ʂ, this is likely due to chronological factors—those transcriptions pre-date the shift of [kʰ] to [ç] in Greek. This point is discussed in further detail in “The Nature of the Transcription System and Its Date” in chapter 3.

61 This was based on spellings such as Νεστανα = نصان dal and εξαρ = صر; see Al-Jallad, “Ṣād.”
likely a pure sibilant, [sʰ], otherwise, the Greek affricate ξ would have perhaps made a better approximate for transcription.

The ẓ and q (z)

Both of these phonemes are represented by Greek Delta, φάδατ = *fādat “it emptied” and λαμ jεχφαδου = *lam yehfaḏū “they did not keep.” The use of Delta is also found in the Islamic-period papyri from Nessana and Egypt,⁶² and a parallel is found in early Judaeo-Arabic with the use of Daleth.⁶³ It is impossible to determine whether these sounds had merged or remained distinct, and if they were distinct, whether a lateral realization of ḍ was preserved. The transcription system in place does not make use of digraphs, and so Delta [ð] would have been the closest approximation to ḍ [ðˁ] and would have certainly been suitable for a lateral ḍ [ɮˁ]. Nevertheless, evidence from pre-tenth-century CE Christian Arabic indicates that ḍ and z had merged,⁶⁴ yet their outcome, whether a plosive or an interdental, remains hard to ascertain.

The qāf

All documents unanimously spell the reflex of *q with Kappa in the pre-Islamic and early Islamic periods, suggesting the realization [q], if not [k'].⁶⁵ The same holds true in the PF: καδζό [qads-oh] “his holiness” (v. 54) and ανκαλεβου [ʔanqalebū] “they rebelled” (v. 57).

The Velarized l

The velarized l is known in the divine name “Allah” in Classical Arabic. This word appears to be velarized in the PF as well, as ā is not raised in its vicinity: compare ελϳλέ΢ [el-ʔilēh] to αλλά΢ [ʔallāh]. The velarized allophone may be conditioned by the presence of a low vowel: compare ατε [ʔatē] to γαλα [ʕalā]. Given that *ā is realized as [ē] unless there is an emphatic, post-velar, or labial consonant, a velarized reflex of l could explain the difference between these two words.

⁶² Al-Jallad, “Arabic of the Islamic Conquests.”
⁶³ Khan, “Orthography and Reading,” p. 397, illustrates this with ṣארח “the ground” = ərux. The use of Daleth suggests that the sound was voiced, and likely an interdental or stop, so [dʰ] or [ðʰ].
Nominal Morphology

The following patterns are attested:

Table 7. Noun patterns attested in the PF

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>CāC</th>
<th>Arabo-Greek</th>
<th>Normalization</th>
<th>Classical Arabic</th>
<th>Translation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>οελναρ (v. 21)</td>
<td>[wel-nār]</td>
<td>wan-nāru</td>
<td>“and the fire”</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>φαύύμ (v. 30)</td>
<td>[fāh-hum]</td>
<td>NA, = CAr ʔafwāhihim</td>
<td>“their mouths”</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

CaCC

| βαχρ (v. 53) | [bahr]  | (al-)baḥri | “sea”  |
| χεινβύι (v. 20) | [šīb-ih] | šaibihī | “his people” |

II-weak

| ελ-καυς (v. 57) | [el-qaws] | al-qawsu | “bow”  |
| χαυλ (v. 28)    | [ḥawl]  | ḥawla    | “around” |
| φαυκ (v. 23)    | [fawq]  | fawqi    | “above” |

Geminate

| ελ-ραβ (v. 21) | [el-rab] | ar-rabbu | “the lord” |
| γεδδα (v. 29)  | [ǧeddā] | ḡaddan  | “very, much” |

CaCCah

| οσαχρ ὑ (v. 20) | [saḫr(a)h] | saḫratun | “rock” |
| [κ]ευοετὑμ (vv. 29, 30) | [šehwet-hum] | šahwatahum | “their desire” |

II-weak

| χαϳμετ (const.) (v. 60) | [ḫaymet] | ḫaymati | “tabernacle” |

CaCČāʔ

| ελ-γαυγέ (v. 57) | [el-ʕawǧē] | al-ʕawǧāʔi | “crooked” |

CuCC

| χοουθ (v. 21)   | [ḥubz]  | ḥubzan   | “bread” |
| ρυγζ (v. 21)    | [ruḡz]  | ruḡzun   | “wrath” |

CuCaC

| (ε)λ-ουμε(μ) (v. 55) | [el-ʔumem] | al-ʔumama | “the nations” |

CuCCah

<p>| κουετό (v. 26) | [quwwet-uhl] | quwwatahu | “his power” |</p>
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Case</th>
<th>Word</th>
<th>Noun</th>
<th>Meaning</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>CaCaC</td>
<td>ġanem (v. 52)</td>
<td>[ġanem]</td>
<td>&quot;goats&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>wasat (v. 28)</td>
<td>[wasat]</td>
<td>&quot;center&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ġebel (v. 54)</td>
<td>[ğebel]</td>
<td>&quot;mountain&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CāCiC</td>
<td>ġaneman (v. 52)</td>
<td>ġanaman</td>
<td>&quot;the southwest wind&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II-weak</td>
<td>māy(i)deh (v. 20)</td>
<td>māʔidatan</td>
<td>&quot;table&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III-weak</td>
<td>ġāliyya (v. 20)</td>
<td>ġāliyya</td>
<td>&quot;the high&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CaCāC</td>
<td>el-ʕāṣif (v. 26)</td>
<td>al-ʕāṣif</td>
<td>&quot;the clouds&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>el-semā (v. 26)</td>
<td>as-samāʔi</td>
<td>&quot;heaven&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>al-saḥāba</td>
<td>al-saḥāba</td>
<td>&quot;his salvation&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CiCāC</td>
<td>el-ʕāliyya (v. 26)</td>
<td>al-ʕāliyya</td>
<td>&quot;the clouds&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>al-ʕāliyya</td>
<td>al-ʕāliyya</td>
<td>&quot;the clouds&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>el-semā (v. 26)</td>
<td>al-ʕāliyya</td>
<td>&quot;heaven&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>el-ʕāliyya</td>
<td>al-ʕāliyya</td>
<td>&quot;heaven&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CaCīC</td>
<td>el-ʕāliyya (v. 26)</td>
<td>al-ʕāliyya</td>
<td>&quot;the clouds&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>yamīnu-hū (v. 54)</td>
<td>yamīnu-hū</td>
<td>&quot;his right hand&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CīCūC</td>
<td>luḥūm (v. 27)</td>
<td>luḥūman</td>
<td>&quot;flesh&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>el-buḥūr (v. 27)</td>
<td>al-buḥūri</td>
<td>&quot;seas&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>tiyūr (v. 27)</td>
<td>tuyūran</td>
<td>&quot;birds&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CaCCaC</td>
<td>ġasker-hum (v. 28)</td>
<td>ġaskari-him</td>
<td>&quot;their camp&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>?aCCāC</td>
<td>ġabāʔi-him (v. 57)</td>
<td>ġabāʔi-him</td>
<td>&quot;their fathers&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ġawtāni-him (v. 58)</td>
<td>ġawtāni-him</td>
<td>&quot;their high places&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>ġabwāba (v. 23)</td>
<td>ġabwāba</td>
<td>&quot;doors&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CiCān</td>
<td>ʔinsēn (v. 25)</td>
<td>ʔinsānun</td>
<td>&quot;man&quot;</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The Psalm Fragment: Script, Phonology, and Morphology

21

maCCaC

| μεσκεν (v. 60) | [mesken] | maskanun | “tent, dwelling” |

maCCūC

| μενχουτέτημ (v. 58) | [menḥūtēthum] | manḥūṭāti-him | “their graven images” |

miCCāC

| ελμιρεθ (v. 55) | [el-mīrēṯ] | al-mīrāṯa | “inheritance” |

CaCāʔiCah

| ελ μεελεικε (v. 25) | [el-melēyke(h)] | al-malāʔikati | “the angels” |

Final Short Vowels

All final short vowels and nunation have been lost, consistent with the evidence from seventh- and eighth-century Nessana and Egypt.66

Χουβζ [ḫubz] < *ḫubzan “bread”
φατεχ [fateḥ] < *fataḥa “he opened”
σεμιɣ [semiʕ] < *samiʕa “he heard”
κεν [kēn] < *kāna “he was”
αμταɾ [ʔamṭar] < *ʔamṭara “he rained”
βιλλαherent [billāh] < *billāhi “by God”

As a result, case distinction in much of the nominal system was obliterated. There are no attestations of the dual, sound masculine plurals, or of the five nouns,67 so it is impossible to determine whether this inflectional category survived in those contexts, as it did in the QCT.68

66 Several scholars have noted the absence of a functioning case system in documents from the early Islamic era, e.g., Hopkins, *The Grammar of Early Arabic*, pp. 2–4; Blau, *Handbook*, pp. 44–45, a conclusion based largely on the facts provided by the PF. The disappearance of the case system is difficult to date, and certainly impossible to date for all areas. In the third or fourth century CE, at least some dialects of Arabic retained the accusative ending (Al-Jallad and al-Manaser, “New Epigraphica I”). The ʿEn ʿAvdat inscription attests a living case system, but the inscription is impossible to date precisely; see Macdonald in Fiema et al., “Provincia Arabia,” p. 339, and Kropp, “ʿAyn ʿAbada Inscription” for a discussion on the dating of this text. On the evidence for case in Old Arabic, see Al-Jallad, “Earliest Stages of Arabic.”

67 That is nouns such as ʔabun “father” and ʔaḥun “brother,” which have long case vowels in construct, e.g., ʔabū, ʔaḥū, respectively.

68 Van Putten and Stokes, “Case in the Quranic Consonantal Text,” argue convincingly that the case system in the language of the QCT was distributed differently than in Classical Arabic, exhibiting full inflection in the above-mentioned categories but lacking in the vast majority of singular nouns. This point is discussed in further detail in chapter 4.
Vestiges of Case

Adverbial -a

The adverbial ending -a is attested twice in the word γεδδα [ǧeddâ] “very,” and it is no doubt a reflex of the old indefinite accusative [ā] < *an. As in many of the modern dialects of Arabic, this morpheme has been semantically narrowed to an adverbial marker, which was only one of its many original functions. On its form, Corriente compares it with many modern dialectal forms, such as Moroccan ḥaqqqa “truly” and abada “never,” and regards the final [a] as the only true reflex of the adverbial accusative in the modern dialects, the [an] variant, as in šukran “thank you!,” being a loan from Classical Arabic.

The Genitive Case

The deletion of final short vowels in theory would not have affected the expression of case in nouns with pronominal clitics, but a very natural analogical change would have leveled both forms to a caseless stem. In most cases, forms with pronominal suffixes do not take a case vowel:

- v. 22 γαλα χαλασὑ [ʕalā ḫalāṣ-uh]
- v. 26 βη κουετὑ [bi-quwwet-uh]
- v. 28 χαυλ χηέμὑμ [ḥawl ḫiyēm-hum]
- v. 29 χευοετὑμ [šehwet-hum]
- v. 56 χευαδ[α]τὑ [šehādāt-uh]

However, three examples exhibit an i-vowel between the stem and the pronominal suffix, all before a plural suffix.

- v. 58 βη αυθάνϳὑμ [bi-ʔaṯwāni-hum]; CAr bi-ʔawṭāni-him
- v. 58 βη μενχουτέτηὑμ [bi-menḥūtēti-hum]; CAr bi-manḥūtāti-him
- v. 57 μιθλ αβαϳὑμ [miṯl ʔābāy(i)-hum]; CAr miṯla ʔābāʔi-him

A single example attests an [i] vowel after the pronominal clitic, λιχειγβὑj [li-šiʕb-uh/-ih] (v. 20).

69 See Hasselbach, Case in Semitic, on the functional range of the Proto-Semitic accusative.

70 Corriente, “Psalter Fragment,” p. 310.


72 Blau, Handbook, p. 44, considered the phrase φηφαὑὑμ (v. 30) to be an example of a hypercorrect usage of the accusative of mouth fā in a context requiring the genitive. This seems to be the result of a transcription error on Blau’s part, as he gives the word as φα. ὑμ in his edition, while Violet’s tracing and Kahle, who saw the actual document, both give φαὑὑμ. Corriente, “Psalter Fragment,” p. 311, correctly rejects this interpretation and connects it with Andalusian Arabic faḥ “mouth.” This form is no doubt a backformation from the plural ʔafwāḥun, where the third consonant h is non-etymological and fills the place of the third radical in this plural pattern.

73 Both Kahle, Die arabischen Bibelübersetzungen and Blau, Handbook, read χαλασὑ (v. 22), but on Violet’s tracing, the final iota is barely visible, represented only by a small dot. The photographs show that this dot is nothing
The interpretation of these examples is not easy. We can, however, rule out some sort of epenthesis to break up the cluster, as the language of the PF seems to tolerate CC consonant clusters, μιθλ [miθl], βαχρ [baḥr], ρυγζ [ruğz], and so on. These isolated examples may suggest that the genitive case survived optionally before pronominal suffixes, an environment where it would not have been subjected to deletion, and perhaps only on certain plural forms; three out of a total of seven examples of a plural pronominal suffix following a noun attest this feature. If this suggestion is correct, then it would reflect a very advanced stage of analogical leveling, where caseless unbound forms are beginning to replace case-bearing bound forms. That the genitive is the only case to survive is in line with typological expectations,74 and one finds a parallel in the Phoenician language.75 The final elongated Iota in λιχειγβὑj (v. 20) is probably an error, but if it is not, then it may represent the genitive followed by the suffix pronoun, ih. The rendering uhi is unlikely, as is Corriente’s appeal to Aramaic orthographic influence.76

A second interpretation would appeal to diglossia. The writer of this text decided to insert the case endings from the literary register Classical Arabic into his transcription. That this only occurs with the genitive is curious, but beyond this, there is no reason to assume the intrusion of classicisms in other cases, and so this explanation, while possible, also runs the risk of being circular. Moreover, it is curious that these forms, which would supposedly be imitations of Classical Arabic, do not display vowel harmony in the clitic pronoun.

**The Feminine Ending**

The feminine ending *-at has clearly shifted to [ah], [eh], with a true consonantal coda consistently spelled with Ypsilon: μυγνεχαὑ [muǧneḥah] “winged”; οελευδιεὑ [wel-ʾʔewdiyeh] “and the valleys.” In Classical Arabic, the pausal form of at is ah, with a true [h]77 and the form eh, with a true [h] as well, is encountered in several dialects of the Arabian Peninsula.78

At least once, this ending is spelled without the Hyphasis, suggesting the weakening of [h] in word final position, ελ<<με>>ελεικε [el-milēy(i)ke] “the angels.”79 As in all forms of Arabic, in construct the original *-t of the feminine ending is preserved: χαϳμετ σεϳλουμ [ḫaymet seylūm] (v. 60) “the tabernacle of Shiloh.”

but a word divider, and therefore the reading must be amended to χαλασου. Kahle restores an Iota following κουετὑ (v. 26), and this is followed by Blau, but this restoration cannot be supported by the photograph—the word is simply κουετό.

74 Hasselbach, *Case in Semitic*, §3.

75 The 3ms clitic pronoun has two allomorphs: Ø [o] following nouns in the nominative and accusative and y [ya] following nouns in the genitive, suggesting the survival of the genitive case -i.

76 Corriente, “Psalter Fragment.”

77 Fischer, *A Grammar of Classical Arabic*, p. 34.


79 Note, however, that this word was originally misspelled, omitting the first syllable /mi/. The scribe inserted it supralinearly. It is therefore possible that the author forgot to write the rough-breathing mark over the Epsilon. Admittedly this is not the normal way to represent word final [h], but finds a parallel in the 3ms suffix.
The Definite Article

The definite article is consistently ελ [el], without assimilation to coronals. All previous editors have taken this as an imitation of Arabic orthography, but this need not be the case. Arabic orthography is in fact based on an Old Arabic dialect that did not assimilate the coda of the article, and this feature is well attested in the Old Arabic of the southern Levant. Not only this, but the non-assimilating article survives into some modern dialects of Arabic as well. There is one fragmentary word that could suggest that the spelling ελ is based on Arabic orthography, the word βερρί in verse 53, which translates Greek ελπίδι “hope.” Violet interpreted the word as a fragment of Arabic [bir-raqāʔ], which, as R. Vollandt informs me, is found in all other Greek-Arabic bilingual Psalm translations of this type (see appendix 1). Nevertheless, the present document diverges in other ways from other comparable translations, so Violet’s inference is reasonable but certainly not proven. While the reconstruction is possible, it creates several problems. From the photograph, it is clear that the iota is accented, suggesting according to the orthography of this document that it reflects a long vowel. The second is the raising of [a] to [i] following [r], which contradicts the raising rules observed elsewhere. Alternatively, it is possible to see the word as complete, rending Arabic birrun “goodness, beneficence,” although this would not be the obvious translation of Greek ἐλπίδα. Given the word’s broken context, it is impossible to say for certain what this example reflects. So, to conclude, the vast majority of cases suggest that the coda of the definite article did not assimilate to the following coronal, but a single fragmentary example could suggest that this was an orthographic convention or that assimilation was optional, and non-assimilated forms were more common.

The onset of the article is normally elided before a preposition: φιλβαχερ [fil-bašer] “among men” (v. 60).

Plurals

Only the feminine sound plural ending is attested, āt/ēt. The broken plural system is active and shows no signs of breaking down. The following plurals are attested:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>ʔaCCāC</th>
<th>Arabo-Greek</th>
<th>Normalization</th>
<th>Classical Arabic</th>
<th>Translation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>αβαʝître (v. 57)</td>
<td>[ʔābāyi]hum</td>
<td>ʔābāʔi-him</td>
<td>“their fathers”</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αυθάνʝître (v. 58)</td>
<td>[ʔawtāni]hum</td>
<td>ʔawtāni-him</td>
<td>“their high places”</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>αβοαβ (v. 23)</td>
<td>[ʔabwāb]</td>
<td>ʔabwāba</td>
<td>“doors”</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

80 The ελ article appears for the first time in the pre-Islamic period in the sixth-century CE Petra Papyri, and there it alternates with αλ, e.g., ελδαργαθ [el-dargāt] “the terraces” (544 CE) compared to αλσουλλαμ [al-sullam] “the terrace” (505–537 CE) (Al-Jallad, “Graeco-Arabica I,” §5.5.1).
82 For example, 1-żwāyil “the beasts of burden” or 1-tānya “the second layer of (extracted) cork” in the rural dialects east of Collo in Algeria, Ostoya-Delmas, “Notes préliminaires,” p. 70. Conversely, this case can also be the result of secondary levelling of the al-form to all situations.
83 For example, the translation of κατεκλύσθησαν as φαδατ in this document but حرت or انمضت in other comparable translations (see appendix 1).
-āt, external plural

| μενχουτέτημ (v. 58) | [menḥūtētihum] | manḥūtāti-him | “their graven images” |

CaCāʔiCah

| ελETSελείκε (v. 25) | [el-melēyke(h)] | al-malāʔikati | “the angels” |

CuCūC

| λυχουμ (v. 27) | [luḥūm] | luḥūman | “flesh” |
| βουχουρ (v. 27) | [buḥūr] | buḥūri | “seas” |
| τηουρ (v. 27) | [ṭiyūr] | ṭuyūran | “birds” |

Pronouns

The Clitic Pronouns

Two clitic pronouns are attested:

| υ | [(u/o)h(u/i)] | hu/hí | “his” (3ms) |
| υμ | [hum] | hum | “theirs” (3mp) |

3ms

The interpretation of the vocalization of the 3ms is complicated by the fact that υ can represent the consonant [h] without a vowel: jουءζει /yuheyyi/ (v. 20) “he prepares”; ελʔλέζ [el-ʔilēh] (v. 56) “the lord.” This may suggest that the 3ms pronominal suffix was simply a clitic h with no vowel: κουετυ [qowwet-h] (v. 26) “his power”; χαλαζυ [ḥalāḥ-h] “his holiness.”

The spelling of the 3mp suffix pronoun as υμ [hum], however, suggests that Hypsilon can also stand for the sequence [hu], and so the pronoun could have been realized as [hu]. Corriente suggests that υ could have represented [uh], but provides no orthographic reason for this.

In one case, the 3ms clitic is spelled υμ [hum], however, suggests that Hypsilon can also stand for the sequence [hu], and so the pronoun could have been realized as [hu]. Corriente suggests that υ could have represented [uh], but provides no orthographic reason for this. In one case, the 3ms clitic is spelled υμ [hum], however, suggests that Hypsilon can also stand for the sequence [hu], and so the pronoun could have been realized as [hu]. Corriente suggests that υ could have represented [uh], but provides no orthographic reason for this.

The following table provides all of the possible pronunciations of the clitic pronoun. For conventional purposes, I will adopt the form uh, which is best supported by the comparative evidence.

| χαλαζυ | [ḥalāḥ-h] | [ḥalāḥ-uh] | [ḥalāḥ-hu] |

84 The 3ms pronominal suffix without a vowel, -h, is known in several Arabian dialects; see Prochazka, *Saudi Arabian Dialects*, p. 126.


86 Khan, “Orthography and Reading,” p. 397.
The pronunciation of the 3mp can only be [hum]; no vowel ever intervenes between the Hypsilon and the Mu. Unlike Classical Arabic, the vowel of the pronoun does not harmonize with the preceding [i] vowel: baytuhum “their house” versus baythihim “their house.” The pronoun retains its shape ὑμ in the two cases following the genitive: αυθάνιὑμ [ʔawṭāni-hum] “their high places”; μενχουτέτηὑμ [menḥūtēti-hum] “their graven images” (v. 58). This feature is attested in the Ḥigāzī dialect as known to the Arabic Grammarians and is common in the modern dialects as well.87

Table 9. Demonstratives

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Proximal ms</th>
<th>Distal ms</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ἁ (δα) [hā(ḏā)]</td>
<td>δέλικ [ḏēlik]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The proximal demonstrative is attested once in fragmentary form: (ελ)γέβελ ἁ (δα) = [(el)-ḏebel hā(ḏā)] (v. 54). The actual demonstrative element is missing, but the hā prefix is clearly attested with the rough breathing on the Alpha. While many Arabic dialects allow for the optional marking of the demonstrative element with hā,88 the QCT only knows forms with a prefixed hā: δάδελ, δάδελ, and so on. The Old Arabic of the north seems to have allowed forms without the hā prefix, as the demonstrative is written simply as dʾ in the Ḟarrān inscription (568 CE).89

The distal demonstrative is attested as part of the conjunction “therefore” λιδέλικ [li-ḏēlik] (v. 21). This is the normal form in the QCT dlk and the commonest form for Classical Arabic, but is otherwise unknown in the modern dialects.

Table 10. Relative pronoun

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>ms</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ελλεδι [elleḏī]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The relative pronoun is attested twice as ελλεδι [elleḏī] (vv. 54, 60), both times with a masculine-singular antecedent, and so it is impossible to say whether this form was invariable or declined in the Classical Arabic/QCT fashion. While the use of elleḏī is usually regarded as a classicism in Middle Arabic texts,90 there is no a priori reason to assume that it is not a dialectal

87 Rabin remarks that, according to Sibawayh, the Ḥigāzī dialect had forms such as bi-ḡulāmi-hū and bi-ḡulāmi-hum, Rabin, Ancient West-Arabian, p. 99. In Levantine Arabic, for example, the form hum is stable: ‘al-e-hum “on them.”
88 For example, Najdi Arabic has a ha by-form of each demonstrative pronoun, e.g., ḏā and hāḏā “this.ms,” Ingham, Najdi Arabic, p. 55.
89 The text reads bnyt dʾ l-mṛṭwl “I built this martyrion”; see Macdonald in Fiema et al., “Provincia Arabia,” p. 414. The same is attested in an unpublished pre-Islamic Arabic-script inscription from the area of Tabūk, dʾ qysw “This is Qays-w.”
form. Several modern Arabic dialects employ an invariable *allaḏī* as a relative pronoun and some Maghrebi dialectal variants seem to go back to this form, for example, *iddi.*

### The Prepositions

The following prepositions are attested in the document. Proclitic prepositions are written without a space when followed by the article but are otherwise written as independent words.

- **bi** “in, with”

  When independent the vowel of the preposition is spelled with Eta but when proclitic to the article it is represented by Iota. As discussed above, this may betray a slightly different realization of these two vowels.

  - βιλλαυ [billāh] “in God” (v. 22)
  - βηκουετὑ [bi-quwwet-uh] “with his power” (v. 26)

- **ʕalā** “upon, concerning”

  Only the long form of the preposition is attested, γαλα [ʕalā] (v. 22), matching QCT and Classical Arabic, in contrast to the short form *ʕal* found in the modern dialects.

- **li / la** “to, for”

  The allomorphy in the dative pronoun, *li-* before nouns and *la-* before pronouns, is partially attested. The preposition has the form λι before the demonstrative, λιδέλι “therefore” and nouns, λιϳσρα[l] [li-ʔisrāl] “against Israel,” but [a] or [e] before the pronouns, λαὑμ [la-hum] (v. 25) vs. Λε[l] [le-hum] (v. 24).

- **min** “from, because of”

  The preposition μιν [min] (v. 24) exhibits no assimilation of the *n,* something typical of the Old Arabic of this region and some modern dialects. It is attested once as a component of the compound preposition μιν•φαυκ [min fawq] (v. 23) “above,” which is known from the modern dialects and Middle Arabic documents. Compound prepositions with *min* are also attested in Old Arabic, Safaitic *mn qbl* “facing.”

---

91 Many contemporary Yemeni varieties employ an invariable *ʔallaḏī* as a relative pronoun Behnstedt, *Die nordjemenschinen Dialekte,* p. 31, and there is no reason to assume that this usage was not more widespread in former times before giving way to the common dialectal form *illi.*

92 On these forms, see Heath, *Moroccan Arabic,* p. 461.

93 This form is also attested in the Jebel Says Inscription (528/529 ce); see Macdonald in Fiema et al., “Provincia Arabia.” The relevant line reads ʾrsl-ny ʾl-ḥrtʾl-mlk ᵗly ʾsys “Al-Hāreth the king sent me to Usays.”


**miṯl “like”**

This preposition appears twice as μιθλ [miṯl] (v. 27).

**fī “in, at”**

Like bi-, this preposition is spelled with an Εta when independent and an Iota when proclitic to the definite article: ϕη οασατ γασκερφύ [fī wasaṭ ʕasker-hum] (v. 28) “in the midst of their camp” versus ϕιλβαχερ [fil-bašer] “among men” (v. 60). Its treatment in an identical way to bi may suggest that its final vowel, which was originally long, had been shortened.

**ʔilē “to”**

Attested as jλέ (v. 54), this form has disappeared in nearly all modern dialects, but is identical to the form in the QCT and the Jebel Says Inscription, ʕly (see n90).

**Conjunctions**

The common Arabic conjunctions are attested: οα [wa] “and” (v. 23), ϐυ [ʔew] “or” (v. 20); v. 22 λιεν(να)Ϧμ [li-ʔen(na-hu)m] “because (they)”; ϕα [fa] “so, then” (v. 21). In addition to this, the translator uses λεγαλ [laʕal] (v. 20), CAr laʕalla “perhaps,” as a translation of Greek μη. Its syntax reflects Greek usage rather than the Arabic. Finally, the conjunction “when” is attested as γινδμα [ʕindmā] (v. 30). While ʕnd is attested in the QCT and in Old Arabic,96 the construction with mā is not found in either corpus. It is, however, attested in Middle Arabic and Classical Arabic.

**The Verb**

Three genders and numbers are attested: 3ms, 3fs, and 3mp. The 3ms is unmarked, while the 3fs terminates in ετ [et], ατ [at], as expected, and the masculine plural in ου [ū]. In III-weak roots, however, the ending is ϐυ [ew].97

**Possible merger of III-ʔ and III-y/w**

The loss of the glottal stop could have led to the merger of final glottal stop and final glide roots. This can be seen in the plural ending on the prefix conjugation of √mlʔ, /ew/ rather than /ū/: λεϳτεμέλλευ [ley(i)teméllew] “in order that they be filled” (v. 25) rather than λεϳτεμέλλεϳου [leytemelleyū]. This change is attested in early Middle Arabic98 and in the modern dialects, for example, Qəltu yaqrā “he reads” but yaqraw “they read.” Nevertheless, it

---

96 Al-Jallad, Outline, pp. 152–53.
97 This development would seem to have occurred at the Proto-Arabic; its earliest attestation, to my knowledge, is found in A1 (third/fourth century ce), ειραυ [yirʕaw] “they pastured”; Al-Jallad and al-Manaser, “New Epigraphica I.”
98 See the discussion under tD-stem on this verb.
is possible that the original form *yatamallaʔū* collapsed simply to *yatamallaw* following the loss of the glottal stop without resulting in the full-scale merger of the two root classes.

**G-stem**

The strong suffix conjugation has two stems, the transitive and intransitive, distinguished by a low (a) and high (i,u) vowel in the second syllable, respectively. These stems are kept separate in the dialect of the PF, for example, αμαρ [ʔamar] “he commanded” versus χεβιγου [šebiʕū] “they were sated.” The stress of this verb form was on the first syllable of the stem, as indicated in βάγαθ (v. 25) [báʕaṯ] “he sent.”

**Weak Roots**

**I-w/y**

One verb of this class is attested and exhibits no exceptional behavior, οακαγατ [waqaʕat] “it fell.”

**II-w/y**

Medial weak verbs collapse the medial triphthong to ā, as in the QCT and Classical Arabic, but unlike Old Arabic. The particular allophone of this phoneme is determined by the emphatic qualities of the root—in non-emphatic roots, it is [ē], while in emphatic ones it is [ā], for example, σέλετ [sēlet] “it flowed” versus φάδατ [fāḍat] “it emptied.”

**III-w/y**

As with medial weak verbs, the original triphthong collapsed to ā, which is realized as [ē] in non-emphatic environments and [ā] in emphatic ones, for example, ατε [ʔatē] “he came” versus γαττα [ġaṭṭā] “he covered” (D-stem).

**Table 11. G-stem verbs attested in the PF**

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Grammatical form</th>
<th>Arabo- Greek/normalization</th>
<th>Translation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>S; 3mp</td>
<td>γάδαρου [ɡadarŭ] (v. 57)</td>
<td>“they acted treacherously”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II-w/y; 3ms</td>
<td>κεν [kēn] (v. 30)</td>
<td>“he was”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II-w/y; 3fs</td>
<td>φάδατ [fāḍat] (v. 20)</td>
<td>“it emptied”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II-w/y; 3fs</td>
<td>σέλετ [sēlet] (v. 20)</td>
<td>“it flowed”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S; 3ms</td>
<td>σεμιγ [semīg] (v. 21)</td>
<td>“he heard”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S; 3ms</td>
<td>ṣαγ(αδ) [ṣaʕad] (v. 21)</td>
<td>“it went up”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S; 3ms</td>
<td>αμαρ [ʔamar] (v. 23)</td>
<td>“he commanded”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S; 3ms</td>
<td>φατεχ [fateḥ] (v. 23)</td>
<td>“he opened”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S; 3ms</td>
<td>(ακ)ελ [ʔakel] (v. 25)</td>
<td>“he ate”</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Prefix Conjugation

The preformative vowel of the prefix conjugation is invariably ι [e], suggesting that the Barth-Ginsberg distribution of Proto-Central Semitic and Proto-Arabic99 was leveled to the [a] value, as [e] is an allophone of *a, and not *i.100

It is impossible to say anything about the existence of modal inflection, as this distinction would mainly appear in the masculine plural and feminine singular of the prefix conjugation following the loss of final short vowels. Only the masculine plural is attested and always following the negator lam, which requires the jussive, and this is the form encountered. However, without a comparable indicative example, it is impossible to know whether this reflects the survival of mood inflection when it is expressed consonantally or the leveling of the subjunctive/jussive form for all purposes, as happened in most modern Levantine dialects.

Table 12. Mood inflection in the prefix conjugation

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Grammatical form</th>
<th>Arabo-Greek/normalization</th>
<th>Translation</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>S; 3ms</td>
<td>jekdir [yeqdir] (v. 20)</td>
<td>&quot;he is able&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1-ʾ; 3mp</td>
<td>liya(kul)u [liyā(kul)ū] (v. 24)</td>
<td>&quot;in order to eat&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S; 3mp</td>
<td>yeǧzaʕū (v. 53)</td>
<td>&quot;they feared (not)&quot;</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S; 3mp</td>
<td>yeḥfaḏū (v. 56)</td>
<td>&quot;they kept (not)&quot;</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

G-internal passive

The internal passive is attested once with the distinctive [u] vowel of the prefix conjugation.101

99 Barth-Ginsberg’s law states that the preformative vowel is a if the stem vowel is high and i if the stem vowel is a, so yaqtul/yaqtil but yiqtal. This distribution is reconstructable for Arabic based on the Najdi dialects, where it is still active, yaktib vs yismaʕ; see Ingham, Najdi Arabic, pp. 22–23. Barth-Ginsberg’s law may have been operative in the Old Arabic of the Levant based on Greek transcriptions; see Al-Jallad, “Graeco-Arabica I,” §5.11.

100 Pace Hopkins, The Grammar of Early Arabic.

101 While Blau, Handbook, p. 70, takes this is an active yuʕdimū, without justification, the passive in the Greek original supports the passive reading given by Kahle, Die arabischen Bibelübersetzungen, p. 35. Violet, “Psalmsfragment,” p. 394, gives the Arabic without vocalizing the difference between active and passive voices. Corriente, “Psalter Fragment,” p. 311, supports Kahle’s reading, and suggests that the verb was originally yafdamū “they did not miss [sic] their satiation,” as he believes a C-stem passive is unlikely in the present “Neo-Arabic” context, but this already assumes the linguistic identity of the text.
The Psalm Fragment: Script, Phonology, and Morphology

D-stem

The D-stem is attested only in weak verbs and exhibits no remarkable behavior.

Table 13. D-stem verbs

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>III-w/y</th>
<th>γατα [gaṭṭā] (v. 53)</th>
<th>“he covered”</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>II-w/y; III-ʾ</td>
<td>ιουχαγιε [yuheyyi] (v. 20)</td>
<td>“he prepares”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I-w</td>
<td>(ιουα)κελου [yuwakkelā] (v. 22)</td>
<td>“they rely (not) upon”</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

tD-stem

This stem is attested once in a very unusual form: leyteméllew “in order that they be sated.” Kahle reads this word as λετεμέλλευ(ι) based on the study of the document in Damascus and states that the photograph is unreliable in this area.102 Violet rendered the word as the noun, ἦς, but this leaves the first j unexplained.103 Corriente struggles with the orthographic difference in rendering the combination of the preformative prefix and the dative preposition, λι /li/ in λιακ[υλ]ου but λει here.104 He, however, overlooks the spelling with the elongated iota with rough breathing. This can reflect consonantal [y] or the sequence [ʔi] or [yi], which gives us two options in interpreting the phonetic realization of this word: [leyteméllew] or [leyteméllew], with the deletion of the vowel of the preformative prefix. Both cases disagree with the standard situation in the modern dialects, where the vowel of the t-morpheme is deleted, yitmallū, and in the QCT, where occasional assimilation patterns suggest a similar phenomenon: ydkr = yaḏḏakkar < *yatḏakkar < *yataḏakkar (Q 7:26).

| III-ʾ       | λετεμέλλευ /ley(i)teméllew/ (v. 25) | “in order that they be filled” |

C-stem

The C-stem appears to be a productive category, but several verbs that take the G-stem in Classical Arabic are attested in the C here: ακσα “he went away,” CAr qaṣā ʕan and εσκεν “he dwelt,” CAr sakana.105 Corriente interprets these instances as hypercorrections, a sign that the C-stem is moribund.106 Unlike Classical Arabic, but like Hebrew and Gəʕəz, this stem was stressed on the second syllable αφσέλ /ʔafsél/ (v. 59) “he despised.” This is also suggested by the spelling of the C-passive participle μυγνεχαὖ [muḡneḥah] “winged” with Ypsilon rather than Epsilon.

---

103 Violet, “Psalmfragment,” p. 394.
105 Corriente, “Psalter Fragment,” p. 308, also considers the verb αφσέλ an example of this phenomenon, equivalent ultimately to Arabic fāṣala. The spelling of the second *a* with Epsilon argues against the presence of an emphatic consonant in the root. To support his connection with the root *fsl*, he claims that the root *fsl* provides no suitable equivalent to Greek ἐξουδένωσεν “he treated with contempt, despised.” The basic meaning of the *fsl*, fāṣala “he was, or became, low, base, ignoble...” (Lane 2398c), however, provides an excellent match. C-stem would then mean “to render contemptible,” which I think is a most suitable rendering of the Greek. 106 At least one vestige of this stage seems to be preserved in the modern Levantine dialects: the verb “to come” is usually iğa, which must derive from the C-stem *ʔaḡaʔa*. 
than Omicron-Ypsilon. As will be recalled, Ypsilon renders unstressed *u, implying that the accent was on the penultimate syllable, thus [muğnéḥah]. Like the G-stem, the triphthong of medial-weak verbs collapses to a long vowel, /ā/.

Table 14. Suffix conjugation of the C-stem

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>S; 3ms</th>
<th>αμτα [ʔamṭar] (v. 24)</th>
<th>“he rained”</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>III-w/y; 3ms</td>
<td>αγτάὑμ [ʔaʕṭā-hum] (v. 24)</td>
<td>“he gave them”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II-w/y; 3ms</td>
<td>αὑάγ [ʔahāǧ] (v. 26)</td>
<td>“he drove”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II-w/y; 3ms</td>
<td>αχάδ [ʔahad] (v. 53)</td>
<td>“he guided”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S; 3ms</td>
<td>αδχ(αλ) [ʔadḫal] (v. 54)</td>
<td>“he made enter”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S; 3ms</td>
<td>αχραγ [ʔaḫraǧ] (v. 55)</td>
<td>“he brought out”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>I-w</td>
<td>αυραθ [ʔawraṯ] (v. 55)</td>
<td>“he made inherit”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S; 3mp</td>
<td>ασχατουὑ [ʔasḫaṭū-h] (v. 58)</td>
<td>“they insulted him”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>II-w/y</td>
<td>αγαρουὑ [ʔaġārū-h] (v. 58)</td>
<td>“they drove him to jealousy”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III-w/y</td>
<td>ακσα [ʔaqṣā] (v. 58)</td>
<td>“he removed”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>S; 3ms</td>
<td>αφσέλ [ʔafsél] (v. 59)</td>
<td>“he despised”</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The /u/ vowel of the prefix conjugation is preserved.\textsuperscript{107}

Table 15. Prefix conjugation of the C-stem

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>III-y; 3ms</th>
<th>ιουγτι [yuʕṭī] (v. 20)</th>
<th>“he gives”</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ι; 3mp</td>
<td>ιουμι(νου) [yūmi(nū)] (v. 22)</td>
<td>“they believed (not)”</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Lt-stem

| S; 3ms | τεγάφελ [teḏafel] (v. 59) | “he rose to anger” |

Gt-stem

As in some modern and medieval Arabic dialects,\textsuperscript{108} the vowel of the first syllable appears to be [a], perhaps with a true glottal stop, as there seems to be a hiatus between it and the preceding vowel of the conjugation in the following phrase: φααμτεναγ [fa-ʔamtenaʕ] “and he grew angry” (v. 21).\textsuperscript{109} The stable alif in the QCT ʾftʿl may suggest that it too had a true glottal stop, and perhaps an a-vowel, in these stems.

\textsuperscript{107} Corriente, “Psalter Fragment,” p. 304.
\textsuperscript{108} For example, southern Ḥigāzi ʔáḥtarag “it burned down,” Prochazka, \textit{Saudi Arabian Dialects}, p. 44, and is a “hallmark” of Andalusi Arabic, Corriente, “Psalter Fragment,” n13.
Table 16. Suffix conjugation of the Gt-stem

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>S; 3ms</th>
<th>αμτεναγ [ʔamtenaʕ] (v. 21)</th>
<th>“he grew angry”</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>S; 3fs</td>
<td>εχτεγαλετ [ʔešteʕalet] (v. 21)</td>
<td>“it kindled”</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>III-w/y</td>
<td>αβτελευ [ʔabtelew] (v. 56)</td>
<td>“they tempted”</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

N-stem

The N-stem is also realized with an /a/ vowel, and possibly a glottal stop, in the first syllable, contra Classical Arabic and Old Arabic, which have *-in and *-na-, respectively. 110

Table 17. Suffix conjugation of the N-stem

| S; 3mp | ανκαλεβου [ʔanqalebū] (v. 57) | “they rebelled” |

Q-stem111

Table 18. Suffix conjugation of the Q-stem

| S; 3mp | μαρμαρου [marmarū] (v. 56) | “they provoked” |

Negation

The negation of the past tense is attested only in the construction lam + short prefix conjugation. While this construction is unknown in the modern dialects, it was widespread in the Old Arabic period, found in the QCT, Safaitic, and even perhaps in the substrate influence on the Haramic Sabaic inscriptions north of al-Jawf, Yemen, and so there can be no doubt that this was a living feature of Old Arabic. 112 There is therefore no reason to assume that this is a classicism in a text this early rather than a survival from the ancient period. 113

| v. 22 | λ(αμ) (ϳουα)κκελου γαλα χαλασυ | “they did not trust in his holiness” |
| v. 56 | ωα χεὑαδ(α)τὑ λαμ ϳεχφαδου | “they did not keep his commandments” |

Mood

As mentioned earlier, only the n-less form of the masculine plural prefix conjugation is attested. The syntactic environments in which these verbs occur, however, all require the n-less

110 On the vocalization of the n-stem as naʕalia in the Safaitic inscriptions, see Al-Jallad, Outline, pp. 134–35. Like the Gt-stem, the N-stem also has the vocalization of ʔinfaʕal in some of the the Ḥigāzī dialects today; see Prochazka, Saudi Arabian Dialects, p. 44.
111 On the terminology of reduplicated forms in Semitic, see Butts, “Nominal Patterns.”
112 For example, in Safaitic we have lm yʿd [lam yaʕod] “he did not return” or lm tmṭr [lam tomṭar] “it was not rained upon” Al-Jallad, Outline, p. 154; in “Haramic,” we have lm ygaʕl “he did not bathe”; Mascitelli, L’Arabo in epoca preislamica, pp. 98–102.
113 Pace Blau and Hopkins, “On Early Judaeo-Arabic Orthography.”
form, that is, after lam and after the purpose clause marker li-, thus we cannot be sure if the old indicative terminating with the n remained intact or was lost.

One serial verb construction is attested: oαχουβζ ϭεκdìρ ϯουȝti [wa-ḫubz yeqdir yuʕṭi] “and he will be able to give bread.” Such constructions are rare in the QCT, restricted to a few verbs, for example lā yakāḏūna yafqahūna ḥadīṯan “they can barely understand speech” (Q 4:78), but are the norm in the modern dialects. This particular syntagm, however, might have been employed to match the Greek, which lacks a subordinating particle.

Syntax

Only a few modest remarks can be made about syntax, as the text often follows the word order of the Greek. In terms of agreement, the feminine singular–inanimate plural concord is observed. This pattern of agreement is not purely a feature of Classical Arabic, but is found in the modern dialects as well, in the QCT and in Safaitic.

οελευδιεǔ ϕάδατ

and the valleys.pl emptied.3fs

Otherwise, the syntax of the text follows the regular translation idiom, closely matching the word order and wording of the Greek, down to the selection of the prepositions. This point is discussed in more detail in appendix 1, “Translation Techniques.”

---

114 Corriente, “Psalter Fragment,” p. 304.
115 On the Safaitic examples, see Al-Jallad, Outline, p. 141, but note that the 3mp is sometimes observed as well in concord.
Chapter 3

Dating and Localizing the Document, Writing System, and Language

The PF consists of five dateable and localizable components, three of which I will deal with in this chapter and two of which will be handled by R. Vollandt in appendix 1. The three that presently concern us are the Greek hand, the transcription system, and the Arabic language itself. Vollandt will treat the quire-structure and translation style. The ability of the translation style to act as a dating method is dependent upon surviving manuscripts, and so it cannot serve as a *terminus post quem* in and of itself. Even though the PF shares a common style and vocabulary with Biblical translations from the eighth and ninth centuries, it is impossible to know how old such traditions are.\(^{116}\) The debate so far has centered on the surviving document, and so we will begin our discussion here.

**Dating the Document**

Any hope of an absolute dating of the document (C14) has been lost with the artifact itself, and so scholars have taken several indirect approaches to establish its chronological point of origin. These have ranged from trying to locate the sociolinguistic context that would most likely motivate the production of such a text to paleography. Until Mavroudi’s rediscovery of the photographs, there was a general consensus that the document could not be much older than 800 CE. The following section will discuss the major opinions on the dating of the PF.

**Violet**

Violet, having studied the original document, came to the conclusion based on the letter shapes that it must have been produced in the late eighth or early ninth century CE. As for its purpose, he proposed that it was made for a Greek-speaking priest with an Arabic-speaking congregation at a time when Greek was no longer widely understood in the Near East.\(^{117}\)

\(^{116}\) A lively debate rages between those who see the Arabic Bible translations of the eighth century as the beginning of a tradition and those who regard it as the consolidation of a pre-existing one. Kashouh, *Arabic Gospels*, supports the latter view, while Griffith, *The Bible in Arabic*, is skeptical.

\(^{117}\) Violet, “Psalmfragment,” co. 386, 488.
Blau

Blau considers the PF an example of early Middle Arabic and follows Violet’s eighth-century dating, though he never makes it explicit why he rules out a ninth-century possibility. He offers no opinion as to its purpose.

Haddad

R. Haddad in a short article dates the Psalm Fragment to the early eighth century as well, but rather than invoking paleography, he argues that this is the latest period in which the text could have been produced, as Greek disappeared in the Middle East around this time. He, moreover, argues for a substantial Aramaic impact on the Arabic language itself.

Macdonald

In an essential article on literacy in an oral context, Macdonald dates the text based on its raison d’être. He hypothesized that the text, owing to its humble production, could not have been a Psalter but rather a more personal document, meant to help improve an Arabic speaker’s knowledge of Greek. Since Arabic-speaking Christians were using the Arabic script in Syria at least 120 years before the appearance of Islam, Macdonald cogently, and very cautiously, suggested that the only time in which an Arabic gloss in Greek letters would have made sense is prior to the period during which Arabic had a script. For the author of this document, Arabic was purely a spoken language, with no associated writing tradition, and this was an ad-hoc attempt to write it in the alphabet of the language he was accustomed to reading and writing. Macdonald responds to the paleographical argument of Violet by stating that Greek uncial letters are extremely difficult to date and were in use as early as the fourth century CE, only being replaced in the tenth century by the miniscule hand. There would, therefore, be no a priori reason to date the document to the Islamic period on the basis of paleography. Following the rediscovery of the photographs of the document and Mavroudi’s paleographic dating, Macdonald retracted his view that it was pre-Islamic. Nevertheless, I find his argumentation sound, and it will be taken up again in the following discussion.

Corriente

Corriente states that he follows Violet’s dating, but then asserts that the document can be dated securely to about fifty years after the Arab conquest of Damascus in 639 CE. He provides no arguments for this considerably earlier date. As for its language, he considers it to be a continuation of the pre-Islamic variety spoken in the area, which he terms “nabaṭī Arabic.”

---

119 Haddad, “La phonétique.”
120 See Corriente, “Psalter Fragment,” n22, for an important response to Haddad’s opinion on this matter.
123 Macdonald, “Old Arabic.”
Mavroudi

Mavroudi carried out a new paleographic study of the text based on the photographs. She concluded that it was produced in the late ninth or even the tenth century. Her dating is based on the following points:

1. Pre-eighth-century uncial manuscripts tend not to employ accents or breathing marks, while the PF makes consistent use of these.

2. The shape of the breathing marks are angular in the pre-ninth-century uncial manuscripts, while they are round in the Psalm Fragment, which suggest a later date.

3. Bilingual manuscripts associated with the PF, but with the Arabic component written in Arabic characters, date to the late ninth or early tenth century.

4. The hand of the Psalm Fragment is very close to that of a dated Greek manuscript (862 CE) from the Palestinian monastery of St. Sabbas.

Her examination of the transcription system, moreover, suggested that the document was produced by an Arabic speaker, but not for practical purposes. It was rather a declaration of a cultural attachment to Greek, akin to Judaeo-Arabic and Garshuni (Arabic written in the Syriac script). The document, moreover, was meant to be read by someone who knew the Arabic language, as several Greek glyphs are polyfunctional, representing more than a single Arabic sound. Thus, one would have to know Arabic in order to choose the correct realization of a given letter. Mavroudi therefore correctly dismisses Violet’s view that the text was meant to be read by a Greek-speaking clergyman.

Vollandt

Vollandt follows Mavroudi’s dating and suggests that the document was intended as an aide mémoire to assist its creator in the study and possibly public performance of the Greek Psalms.

Discussion

Mavroudi’s paleographic dating is convincing and, at its latest, is about a century later than Violet’s original dating. However, since all of the paleographic arguments are circumstantial, a few caveats should be made clear. The first is that while pre-eighth-century uncial

---

125 Mavroudi, “Arabic Words in Greek.”
127 Mavroudi, “Arabic Words in Greek,” pp. 325, suggests that the inventor of this system knew how to read and write Arabic as well. This position is less easy to defend. While it is true that many of the letters of the script are polyphonic, this is no indication that knowledge of another script was required to decipher the text. In fact, the Arabo-Greek script employed in this document is no more ambiguous than the pre-Islamic Arabic script. One could, in fact, argue that the presence of vowels in the Arabo-Greek script often helps to disambiguate words that are otherwise identical in the consonantal Arabic script.
128 Vollandt, Arabic Versions of the Pentateuch, pp. 55–58.
manuscripts rarely employ accents and breathing marks, if the text was produced as a learning aid, or even for a person who had a less-than-perfect command of Greek, this may have motivated the writing of accents and breathings to a greater extent. This fact would make the feature less relevant for dating. As for the breathing marks, both round and angular shapes are present, and given that the hand is not entirely careful, it is difficult to determine if this should be a decisive factor. Finally, while it is significant that the text was found in a store with other documents written in what appears to be a similar hand, the great diversity of texts contained therein argues against the assumption that they all originated from the exact same period. In fact, the hand of the PF seems to be less heavy and compact when compared to the other uncial manuscripts from the same repository. Nevertheless, Mavroudi supplies a number of comparable uncial samples from the ninth and tenth centuries, bolstering the case for such a date. 129 Enough comparable examples from the eighth century exist to prevent us from completely ruling out a late eighth- or early ninth-century date, as Violet originally hypothesized, but the case for a late ninth-century date is certainly stronger. A pre-Islamic date, if paleographically possible at all, carries a heavy burden of proof.

This late dating, however, must still be explained in light of Macdonald’s arguments for a pre-Islamic origin, which remain valid even if the chronology is no longer feasible. Why, in the late ninth century, would an Arabic text, a learning or memory aid no less, be written in the Greek script? Mavroudi’s idea that the text was a symbol of cultural attachment to Greek as a language of Christianity, akin to Judaeo-Arabic and Garshuni, 130 is challenged by two issues: i) its humble composition (was this text meant to be seen by anyone other than its author?) and ii) the fact that the Arabic script had become a symbol of Arab Christianity even in the pre-Islamic period. 131 It appears alongside Greek in the Harrān inscription (568 ce) and Greek and Syriac in the Zebed inscription (512 ce), and a number of pre-Islamic Arabic graffiti from Arabia bear crosses and Christian expressions. 132 Indeed, two Christian inscriptions from the first century of Islam in Arabic indicate that a written Christian Arabic continued into the seventh century ce. 133

Since the purpose of the Arabic component of the PF was to clarify the Greek text to its reader, it is surely the last place to experiment with writing Arabic in an unconventional way.

129 To her examples may be added: a small volume of hymns in the British Museum, Add. MS 26113, of the eighth or ninth century (Cat. Anc. MSS i. pl. 14; Pal Soc. ii. pl. 4); the Bodleian Genesis (Gk. Misc. 312), of the ninth century (Pal. Soc. ii. pl. 26); a Dionysius Areopagita at Florence, also of the ninth century (Vitelli and Paoli, Fascim. Paleogr., tav. 17); and a Lectionary in the Harleian collection, of the end of the ninth or beginning of the tenth century (Cat. Anc. MSS i. pl. 17).

130 While written Judaeo-Arabic is old, with the earliest documents dating to the early tenth century, the systematic writing of Arabic written in Syriac letters (= Garshuni) seems to be a much later phenomenon. The earliest literary manuscripts copied in Garshuni date to the fourteenth century, but an isolated example of writing Arabic in Syriac letters—a marginal note—dates to the mid-twelfth century; for a discussion, see Mengozzi, “The History of Garshuni as a Writing System: Evidence from the Rabbula Codex.” Mengozzi brings to our attention an Arabic note written in Syriac letters discussed by Briquel-Chatonnet, Desreumaux, and Binggeli, “Un cas très ancien de garshouni ? Quelques réflexions sur le manuscrit British Library Add 14644,” that could be earlier, although Blau, Emergence, p. 42n1, expresses some reservations.

131 Macdonald, Literacy and Identity, vol. 1, n167.

132 On these, see Robin, al-Ghabbān, and al-Saʿīd, “Inscriptions antiques de Najrān” and Nehmé, “Dated Inscriptions from Dumah.”

133 A Christian Arabic inscription discovered near Qasr Burquʿ in Jordan most likely comes from the end of the seventh century ce; Al-Jallad et al., “Yazīd the King.” Another interesting text comes from the excavations of al-Ḥīrah; it bears a cross and a blessing for a certain Abd al-Masīḥ. The authors date this text to the seventh century ce, but the paleography could suggest a later date; al-Jumaili, “Abd Al-Masīḥ.”
Any educated Arabic speaker of the ninth century would have certainly been comfortable with the Arabic script, and the impromptu rendering of the translation into the Greek script would have caused a greater degree of interpretive ambiguity. Mavroudi brings to our attention a fascinating document, also from Damascus and dated to the tenth century, that underscores this point. The fragment is a bilingual rendition of a liturgy, the Anaphora of Saint James, with the Greek portions transcribed in Syriac script. The readers seem to have been more acquainted with Syriac, and therefore this practice helped elucidate the pronunciation of the Greek. If the same was true of the PF, it would suggest that the intended audience was more acquainted with Greek writing rather than Arabic, and thus would point to an earlier date, but not necessarily pre-Islamic.

The Melkite communities of the Near East adopted Arabic quickly following the conquests, no doubt owing to the fact that large parts of the southern Levant and the Sinai were already Arabic speaking and that the early Muslim state integrated Melkites into the government. Vollandt provides several anecdotes indicating that, by the end of the eighth century, even Melkite monks had a diminished command of Greek. This was surely preceded by a situation when members of this community had become Arabic speaking but still used Greek as a literary language. Indeed, by the late ninth century, the anonymous author of the Summa Theologiae Arabica stated that his motivation for composing the text in Arabic was that it “was a clear language that ordinary people understand.” We may, therefore, suggest that a spoken command of Arabic preceded the adoption of the language as a literary standard by the Melkite community. The transcription of Arabic in Greek letters would fit this transitional moment, when Arabic was a widely spoken but perhaps not commonly written among members of the church. Since by the end of the eighth century, Christian Arabic texts were produced by the Melkites, it is possible that this, perhaps short-lived, transitional period can be dated slightly earlier.

**Limits of Paleography**

Paleographic dating has an important limitation not discussed by either Mavroudi or Violet—it dates the copy. A tenth-century date for the fragment that has reached us does not imply that the language of the translation or its transcription system originates in that period. Vollandt’s suggestion that the document was meant to facilitate an understanding of the Greek Psalms is convincing, but its transcription system suggests that it was not an impromptu invention of the author. Unlike other examples of ad-hoc transcriptions of Arabic into Greek, the PF presents a well-thought-out and planned system, one that probably went through a more rudimentary experimental phase. As such, the transcription system likely belonged to a tradition of writing Arabic in Greek letters rather than being the result of spontaneous creativity, opening up the possibility that the surviving document, like the Greek of its Greek portion, was a copy.

---

135 Gzella, *A Cultural History of Aramaic*, pp. 325–26, gives evidence for Arabic substrate in Christian Palestinian Aramaic, suggesting to him that the language no longer functioned as “a pragmatically prominent idiom” by the mid-ninth century.
The Nature of the Transcription System and Its Date

The ad-hoc transcriptions of Arabic names in the Greek papyri of Nessana and Egypt from the first Islamic century (i.e., the first century of the Islamic conquests, < 750 CE) exhibit variation in the representation of consonants, the inconsistent use of digraphs, a hesitation in the writing of the diphthong [ai], and many of the post-velar sounds with no equivalent in Greek are simply left unnoted. Such variation suggests that no convention for the transcription of Arabic into Greek was in place; scribes more or less rendered phonetically what they heard.

The absence of a codified transcription system is clear in a later informal Arabo-Greek text, a medical recipe written in the margins of a medical manuscript from southern Italy or Sicily produced in the eleventh century. Following Mavroudi’s interpretation of the text, Arabic [g] is represented by both Greek Chi (δουχ = [ḏūq] “taste”) and Kappa (μουνέκκα = [muneqqa] “cleaned,” منقى). The writing of Arabic [i] alternates randomly between Iota and Eta, μιθκὰλ = /miṯqāl/ “measure” versus μηλχ = /milḥ/ “salt”; word-initial [y] is represented in different ways: ἰουλαδ = [yūlad] “it is produced” versus ἰαριγ = [iyāriǧ], ايرج.

Arabic [ʕ] is entirely unrepresented in the writing system, for example, ροβο = [roboʕ] “quarter.” This type of inconsistency matches the methods of transcribing Arabic into Greek from the twelfth-century ǧarāʾid of Sicily. Variation in the representation of almost every consonant not found in Greek is encountered. For example, a number of methods to represent Arabic [ğ] are attested: τζ <tz>, τζέπερ = [ǧēber]; γζ <gz>, λαραγζ = [l-aʕraǧ]; ζ <z>, φαραζ = [faraǧ]; γ <g>, επιν ελγητίτ [ebin el-ǧidīd]; [ʕ] can be rendered by Gamma γίτζιλις [ʕiǧil(is)] or Chi τζαχφαρες [ǧaʕfar(es)].

The transcription system of the PF differs from the previously discussed examples, as it is more or less regular, and reflects an intentional design, yet at the same time is independent of the Arabic script. All Arabic consonants are consistently represented by a single Greek glyph—no digraphs are employed—and the Greek vowels are consistently used to represent their closest phonetic counterpart in Arabic. In this section, we will compare the transcription system to other instances of transcribing Arabic into Greek letters in light of what is known about Greek historical phonology in an attempt to triangulate the most likely period in which it was devised.

The particular values of the Greek glyphs can provide some insight into the dating of the transcription system, but as we shall see, even this cannot be definitive. If the Greek of the transcription system reflected the day-to-day register of its original author, then two of its remarkable features could imply a rather early date: the phonetic reality of the rough breathing and the rounded value of the Ypsilon, used to represent Arabic [u]. Aspiration is thought to have been lost in spoken Greek around the fourth century CE, but one must naturally admit a reasonable margin of error when it comes to such developments, especially in peripheral areas. That its phonetic realization survived in the Greek of the Near East

---

138 For examples, see Al-Jallad, “Arabic of the Islamic Conquests.”
139 Mavroudi, “Arabic Words in Greek,” pp. 334–40. This text was originally edited and published by B. Zipser, greaco-arabische Medizin
140 These are administrative documents in Arabic, Greek, and Latin from Norman Sicily; see Agius, Siculo Arabic, on their linguistic features.
141 Agius, Siculo Arabic, p. 411.
142 Agius, Siculo Arabic, p. 417.
143 On the loss of aspiration, see Allen, Vox Graeca, pp. 50–53.
before this period is evident in the transcription of Greek aspiration with *h* in loanwords into Semitic languages. For example, Greek loans in Syriac from around the mid-third century usually represent the rough breathing with *h*, for example, *hpws* for Greek ἱππεύς and *ḥpt* for Greek ὑπατεία. Likewise, Greek aspiration is reflected in Safaitic as *h*, attested in the name *hrdṣ* (=Ἡρωδης). The loss of aspiration was already underway in the first century BCE in Egyptian Greek. In all of the pre-Islamic material, only two cases are known to me of Hypsilon being used to represent a post-velar fricative, both times *h*. The first is in a fragmentary bilingual Nabataean-Greek inscription from Muʿarribeh, Syria, where Nabataean name *ḥplw* is rendered as Υφφαλ[ος], and the second comes from P.Petra III 23, 8 (544 CE) in the Arabic toponym Υναυελθα(ι)ς = [ḥinaw el-tays] “the bending part (of the valley) Tays.” Admittedly, both examples could reflect an unconventional attempt to write an initial vowel, as Hypsilon represents a CV-sequence in both cases.

The significance of this transcription practice is brought into relief once we consider the rendering of Arabic [h] into Greek in the Siculo-Arabic material. In both the Graeco-Arabic recipe and the ḣarāʾid documents, Chi is used to transcribe Arabic [h], for example επιν τάχερ [ebin ṭāher], indicating that after the loss of the rough breathing, the velar fricative was considered the closest approximation of this sound in Greek. The absence of any graphic representation of [h] in the pre-Islamic Graeco-Arabica may be due to the medium—most of this material comes from rock inscriptions, where accents and breathing marks are never employed. It is therefore entirely possible that in these early periods, aspiration obtained and was used to mark Arabic [h], as well as other post-velar sounds, but the surviving media do not afford us an opportunity to see it graphically represented.

The history of the vowel represented by Ypsilon is not entirely clear either. The vowel is almost never used to represent Arabic vocalism in the pre-Islamic Graeco-Arabica, suggesting that the sound it represented was entirely foreign to Arabic, so probably ü. There is at least one example where Ypsilon is used to represent the coda of the Arabic diphthong [ai], φοσεύαθη /φοσέyyat/. While the final disappearance of the rounded quality of Ypsilon in the Greek mainland is dated to the ninth–tenth centuries at the very latest, evidence from transcription of spoken Greek indicates that this might have occurred much earlier in the Near East. Such can be seen in the borrowing of Greek ecclesiastical terms into Arabic. Mavroudi already points out the fact that the rough breathing is completely omitted, but it should be added that Ypsilon is also consistently represented with Arabic ِی or unrepresented (i.e., borrowed with a short vowel), for example بولخرونيون پολυχρόνιον. In fact, the earliest surviving Arabic papyrus from the Islamic era (642 CE), found in Egypt, attests

---

144 See Healey, “Lexical Loans,” p. 81; for more examples of Greek loans into Syriac, see Butts, Language Change in the Wake of Empire, pp. 75–80.
145 This inscription is dated to the first century CE; see Harahsheh and Shdeifat, “agrībā al-ṭānī,” #5, and Al-Jallad, Outline, p. 251.
148 Agius, Siculo Arabic, p. 420.
149 The inscription is number 301 in Meimaris and Kritikakou-Nikolaropoulou, Palaestina Tertia, and is undated. For a more detailed discussion of this name and spelling, see Al-Jallad, “Graeco-Arabica I,” pp. 140–41.
151 Graf, Termini, pp. 17, 27.
152 This is the famous PERF 558, Grohmann, “Allgemeine Einführung.”
Ahmad Al-Jallad

this same pattern of borrowing. The Arabic of this bilingual Greek-Arabic document renders
the name Ἄπακύρος as قلخ، which, aside from indicating that the Arabs had reanalyzed the
first part as the word for father, reveals that Ypsilon may no longer have been rounded,
thus merging with [i].

At face value, these transcription practices would suggest that the system was contrived
sometime prior to the seventh century. However, the Syriac-Greek fragment of the Anaphora
of Saint James, mentioned earlier, attests a similar phonological situation. Greek Ypsilon
is transcribed with Syriac ṯ and Hypsilon as ḥw. Mavroudi importantly adds that the rough
breathing is only represented in the Syriac transcription of Hypsilon (word-initial Y). She
concludes that it was not a living feature of the language, but artificially preserved in this
predicable context. These facts suggest that the liturgy of the East, or at least this specific
liturgy, was relatively archaizing in terms of its pronunciation of Greek, as both the loss of
rough breathing and the merger of Ypsilon and Iota appeared to have taken place by this
time. The Syriac spellings could reflect an artificial register of liturgical Greek rather than
the spoken Greek of the period.

While the transcription system of the PF employs ṣ for Arabic [h] and [(u)hu], matching
the Syriac transcriptions mentioned above, the rough breathing is far from a linguistic relic.
It is used to indicate consonantal h before other vowels as well, such as ἀδα = [ḥā(ḏā)] or
καδσό [qads-ho]-[qads-oh]. In addition to this, it is used in conjunction with the elongated
Iota to indicate consonantal [y]. This indicates that the inventor of this transcription system
understood the phonetic value and function of the rough breathing independently of its
predictable position on Hypsilon. Mavroudi, however, suggests another possible source for
this practice: knowledge of Greek grammar.

In addition to the value of Hypsilon, the transcription of the Arabic consonants can also
be compared to the abundant pre-Islamic and first-Islamic-century transcriptions. The Greek
letters are used to represent the following Arabic phonemes.

---

153 On the re-analysis of Ἀπακύρος as قلخ، which, aside from indicating that the Arabs had reanalyzed the
first part as the word for father, reveals that Ypsilon may no longer have been rounded,
thus merging with [i].

154 Alternatively, Greek ü could have been regarded closer to Arabic [i], but I find it difficult to see how the
roundedness of the vowel would have been ignored.

155 Sauget, “l’anaphore de Saint Jacques.”

156 Mavroudi, “Arabic Words in Greek. p. 323.

157 Ibid.

158 Dr. A. Butts informs me of an interesting anecdote where Jacob of Edessa (d. 703) encourages scribes in a
letter to stop using Syriac ṯ for the Greek spiritus asper because it was “old-fashioned”; Butts, Language Change
in the Wake of Empire, p. 5n37.
Table 19. Comparison of Greek transcriptions methods in pre-Islamic inscriptions/papyri, first-Islamic-century papyri, and the PF

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Pre-Islamic</th>
<th>Papyri from first Islamic century</th>
<th>Psalm Fragment</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>χ</td>
<td>*k, rarely *h</td>
<td>*k, sometimes *h</td>
<td>*h, *h, *ś</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>θ</td>
<td>*t, *t̄</td>
<td>*t̄, *t̄</td>
<td>*t̄</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>κ</td>
<td>*q</td>
<td>*q</td>
<td>*k, *q</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>τ</td>
<td>*t̄, *t̄̄</td>
<td>*t̄</td>
<td>*t̄, *t̄̄</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>γ</td>
<td>*g, rarely *g</td>
<td>*g, *g̣</td>
<td>*g, *g, *g̣</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>σ</td>
<td>*s, *ṣ, *ṣ̄, *ḍ</td>
<td>*s, *ṣ, *ṣ̄</td>
<td>*ṣ, *ṣ̄</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>j (elongated iota with rough breathing)</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>*y(i), or possibly *ʔι</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>û</td>
<td>once for *hü; once for *hi</td>
<td>NA</td>
<td>*h, *hu, possibly *uh</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

It is clear that the PF employs a more progressive pronunciation of the Greek voiceless velar and dental aspirated stops, χ [kʰ] and θ [tʰ], respectively. In all of the pre-Islamic material and in the transcriptions of the first Islamic century, these phonemes remained aspirated occlusives. The transcription system of the PF reflects a completely different phonetic alignment of Greek, closer to the Greek transcriptions of Sicily. While pre- and early Islamic writers associated the unaspirated stops with the Arabic emphatics and used the aspirated stops to render the plain consonants, the inventor of the transcription system of the PF did not have this option. In his Greek, there was only one set of voiceless stops, κ and τ, and, therefore, no distinction for emphasis could be made. The formerly aspirated stops had become fricatives and were used to represent the corresponding Arabic fricatives, if only roughly in the case of Chi and Gamma. Nevertheless, the PF is perfectly systematic, in contrast to the Sicilian Arabo-Greek transcriptions, where, for example, ʕ is represented haphazardly by both Gamma γίγιλις [ʕiǧil(is)], and Chi τζαχφαρες [ǧaʕfar(es)].

Dating this change in Greek is difficult. Allen asserts that the fricative pronunciations were well established in the Byzantine period. The Coptic alphabet, devised in the third century CE, was based on a Greek with aspirated rather than fricative realizations of χ and θ, and the same is true of Armenian, some two centuries later. However, Allen importantly notes that in the tenth century, Armenian begins to transcribe Chi with its x and š glyphs, matching

159 The equivalence between the unaspirated stops and the Arabic emphatics was made on the basis of the absence of aspiration in both sets. See Al-Jallad, “Graeco-Arabica I,” pp. 114–27, for a comprehensive discussion on the phenomenon.

160 Agius, Siculo Arabic, p. 417.

161 Allen, Vox Graeca, p. 23.
the values in the PF. Nevertheless, the fact that Greek δραχμή is loaned as [dirham], attested already in the Quran (e.g., Q12:20), suggests that by the seventh century, in at least some registers, Chi was realized as a fricative.\textsuperscript{162}

The representation of Arabic šīn in the PF contrasts with the early and pre-Islamic situation. The pre-Islamic material represents all of the voiceless Arabic sibilants with Sigma, obscuring the pronunciation of the phoneme. This situation holds in the first Islamic century transcriptions from Nessana, but in Egypt, the digraph Sigma-Zeta is occasionally employed, for example Σζερίκ (PL4 1383, 1; 709 ce) = [šerīk], suggesting that Chi did not have a palatal allophone. In Siculo-Arabic transcriptions, we seem to encounter Sigma when Arabic /š/ follows a low vowel and Chi when it follows a high vowel, matching the allophonic realizations of the Greek consonant, Sigma: ενναγκας [en-naqqāš] versus Chi: βουρήχ [bū-riš].\textsuperscript{163}

The PF uses only χ for the representation of š, which indicates that the underlying Greek had two allophones, [x] but [ç] before i and e, and that its use was conventional, rather than phonetic (see pp. 8–9), as Chi is used for š even after [a]. There is, however, no positive evidence as to when this change took effect—\textsuperscript{164}—that is, whether it co-developed with the shift of Chi to a fricative or was a subsequent transformation. In the Syriac transcription of the liturgy of Saint James, the palatalized allophone of Chi is given by Syriac š, and the same is true of tenth-century Armenian transcriptions of Greek. These suggest the tenth century as a \textit{terminus ante quem} for the development of this allophone, at least in the Near East.

In the Siculo-Arabic material as well as the PF, vowel length is often represented by accents. In the PF it is consistently the acute, or the circumflex with the digraph Omicron-Ypsilon, while in the Arabo-Greek recipe, the grave is sometimes used. It is impossible to compare this to the pre-Islamic transcriptions, as accents are never represented in inscriptions. The association of the accent with length is the result of the loss of contrastive vowel length in Greek, something well established by the Common Era.\textsuperscript{165}

One overlooked fact supports the artificial, and at the same time intelligently designed, nature of the PF transcription system—in no forms of Greek for which we have independent evidence do the aspirated consonants shift to fricatives before the loss of the rough breathing. The existence of a productive rough-breathing mark in the PF suggests that it was introduced, as Mavroudi suspected, from knowledge of Greek grammar and not the spoken register. And while Mavroudi makes a compelling case that this would have been possible in the ninth or tenth century, it would have been equally possible earlier as well, and so again cannot be used to determine the period in which the transcription system was devised.

Finally, the rationale of the transcription system does not betray any influence from Arabic orthography and indeed seems to be based on a purely oral model of Arabic. The graphic similarity of a letter in Arabic does not necessarily affect its transcription in the Arabo-Greek script, for example س is represented by Sigma while ط is given with Chi. Independent prepositions are often written proclitically, even if they are not so in the Arabic script, φιλβασερ /fil-bašer/ “among men” versus في البشر, while proclitic prepositions are sometimes written

\textsuperscript{162} Jeffery, \textit{Foreign Vocabulary}, p. 129, suggests the word was borrowed from Persian, which seems likely as the Syriac retains the /k/, \textit{drkm}. The Persian form can be derived from *drahm. The representation of Greek Chi with a fricative can only mean that it was, at this point, realized as [x], as Persian had the means to represent an aspirated k.

\textsuperscript{163} Agius, \textit{Siculo Arabic}, p. 415.


\textsuperscript{165} Allen, \textit{Vox Graeca}, §3.
Dating and Localizing the Document, Writing System, and Language

separately, βη κουετὑ [bi-quwwet-uh] “with his might” CAr. حقوته. Dots are used to divide not only words, but sometimes even syllables, strongly suggesting that no written model was in mind when devising this script. This contrasts with Classical Judaeo-Arabic and Garshuni, both of which were designed on the basis of the Arabic script.166

The facts reviewed so far point in various directions. The Arabo-Greek script of the PF is just that—a Greek-based writing system for Arabic, and is not comparable as a system with other examples of writing Arabic in Greek from the Islamic period. It is consistent, and in some ways conventional, in its representation of Arabic phonology, especially with regard to the transcription of phonemes absent in Greek.

What the transcription system can tell us about the date of its invention depends on the weight we give to competing pieces of circumstantial evidence. When compared to pre-Islamic methods of transcribing Arabic into Greek, it becomes clear that the script is based on a completely different model of Greek phonology. In some ways, the seventh- and eighth-century transcriptions appear to be a midway point between the pre-Islamic situation and what is found in the PF, at least when it comes to the representation of the post-velar consonants, but nothing in the way of a steady development can be proposed. These similarities likely stem from linguistic commonalities shared between the conquest dialect and the dialect of the PF against the local pre-Islamic varieties; we will return to this issue in the next section.

The transcriptions of Arabic into Greek, even as late as the middle of the eighth century, suggest that an archaic pronunciation of Greek, comparable to New Testament Greek, survived in administrative circles in the Near East. If the transcription system was devised in the middle of the ninth century, it would suggest that the phonetic system of Greek experienced a major upheaval in just the span of one hundred years, aligning it more closely with the Greek of the mainland. Perhaps more likely is the case that the Greek of the administrative documents from Petra and Nessana, and of the earlier epigraphy, is not directly comparable to the contemporary liturgical register, and the latter may have been closer to mainland Greek. The most liberal range of dating the transcription system based on the values of the Greek consonants suggests a terminus post quem of the fourth century CE. The first concrete evidence for a fricative realization of χ comes from the Greek δραχμή as dirham in seventh-century Arabic. On the other hand, its palatal allophone is only proven after the tenth century CE in the Near East, and so this could suggest a late point of origin, nearly contemporary with the paleographic date.

The conventions of the transcription system rule out a direct connection with the pre- and early Islamic transcriptions: the Arabo-Greek script employed in the PF is not the maturation of the habit of writing Arabic in Greek letters from the pre-Islamic period.

166 In Classical Judaeo-Arabic, for example, the dād is represented by a tsade with a supralinear dot, mimicking the graphic relationship between ص and ض; Khan, “Orthography and Reading,” p. 397; both Judaeo-Arabic and Garshuni add two supralinear dots to the he when it represents the feminine ending, an imitation of the Arabic tāʾ marbūṭah. Mengozzi, “The History of Garshuni,” p. 299, characterized Garshuni as simply the Arabic writing system in Syriac dress.
Dating and Localizing the Language

The PF’s value for the linguistic history of Arabic has been widely recognized, but there does not seem to be any consensus as to what register its language reflects. Blau, followed by Khan, regards it as an example of Middle Arabic, a register in which classical, post-classical, Neo-Arabic, and pseudo-correct features alternate freely. Hopkins discusses the document extensively as a point of comparison with the papyri, which form the main subject of his study, but he never states explicitly what the relationship between the two is. He seems to follow Blau in interpreting some of its features as pseudo-corrections, thus implying that the language of the document was aiming at the classical literary register.

Corriente convincingly argues that a scenario in which a person attempted to write Classical Arabic in Greek letters makes little sense. He therefore regards the language of the PF as identical with the colloquial, that is, the spoken register of Arabic used and understood by Christians of the area. Divergences only occur when the author attempts to adhere to the Greek wording or syntax, but never in an attempt to imitate a higher register of Arabic. The orthographic dimension, discussed above, lends further support to Corriente’s hypothesis. Thus, the phonology and morphology of the PF reflect the contemporary vernacular, while its syntax follows the Greek, a common phenomenon in these types of translations.

Corriente goes on to identify the type of Arabic vernacular reflected in the PF as “nabaṭī.” From my reading, it seems that by nabaṭī he means not the Arabic of the ancient Nabataean kingdom, but rather a hypothetical variety of Arabic that developed in the northern Higāz, Iraq, and Syria in the two centuries before the rise of Islam. The hallmark feature of this form of Arabic was absence of case inflection. For him, Nabaṭī Arabic is the immediate forerunner of the modern dialects, and the PF would be an example of a pre-Islamic northern dialect recorded in the eighth century.

When Corriente formulated this hypothesis, relatively little was known about the Old Arabic of the Levant. Categories such as Nabaṭī Arabic were the product of theorization rather than evidence-based investigation. In a series of studies over the last five years, I have attempted to synthesize an image of these pre-Islamic dialects based on Greek transcriptions, Nabataean and ancient North Arabian epigraphy of the area. A fragmentary, but nevertheless

---

168 Khan, “Orthography and Reading.”
169 I critique this definition in chapter 4.
171 Corriente, “Psalter Fragment,” p. 316.
173 For a deeper elaboration of the views expressed in his 2007 piece on the PF, see Corriente, “From Old Arabic to Classical Arabic.” In this work, Nabaṭī Arabic is the īrāb-less forerunner of Middle Arabic, and was localized in the urban areas of the Levant and Iraq, before spreading into the Arabian Peninsula following the conquest (p. 88). While there can be no doubt that there were īrāb-less dialects of Arabic in the pre-Islamic period, and indeed that these were spoken in the Levant, the transcriptions from the first century AH papyri also show that the Arab conquerors, for the most part, spoke a dialect of Arabic with a reduced case system as well; see Al-Jallad, “Arabic of the Islamic Conquests.”
clear, picture of these varieties is now available to compare with the PF in order to test Cor-
riente’s hypothesis, in turn allowing us to localize the language of this text.

Linguistic Features

The PF differs from the attested ancient Levantine dialects in almost every comparable way, siding with the dialect of Arabic introduced by the Arab conquerors but not identical to it.

The Lateral ḍ and Emphatic Interdental ẓ

Greek transcriptions of Old Arabic before the sixth century CE represent ḍ with Sigma and ẓ with Tau, suggesting voiceless realizations of both.\textsuperscript{175} This is found even as late as 568 CE, in the Ḥarrān inscription, where the Arabic طلمو = Car طلموم is rendered in Greek as ταλεμου.\textsuperscript{176} By the sixth century, the scanty evidence from Petra and Nessana suggests that they had become voiced, and both were realized with Zeta, which points away from an interdental pronunciation.\textsuperscript{177} Both phonemes in Arabic names introduced by the conquering Arabs are represented in Greek transcription with Delta, which is the method employed in the PF. I have carefully suggested that the writing with Delta implies a voiced dental or interdental realization of the two, and perhaps even their merger to the value of the emphatic interdental, thus [ðˁ].\textsuperscript{178} As argued in chapter 2 (“Consonants: The ḍād and ḍāʔ”), the PF transcription likely reflects an emphatic voiced interdental, thus matching the conquest variety rather than the ancient Levantine type.

The Reflex of Triphthongs

Word Final

In the dialect upon which Arabic orthography was based, the sequence *eya either survived or collapsed to an i-class vowel, likely [ē]. In Classical Arabic, however, the triphthong collapsed to [ä]. The mismatch between orthography and pronunciation therefore gave rise to the convention that certain <y> glyphs must be pronounced as [ä] in word-final position,\textsuperscript{179} resulting in the so-called alif-maṣūrah.

\textsuperscript{175} This is discussed extensively in Al-Jallad, “Graeco-Arabica I,” pp. 131–37.

\textsuperscript{176} For the latest discussion of the Ḥarrān Inscription, see Macdonald’s discussion in Fiema et al., “Provincia Arabia,” pp. 414–15. For a discussion on the significance of the possible survival of this voiceless realization in the modern dialects of the Maghreb, see Al-Jallad, “Voiceless Reflex.”

\textsuperscript{177} In the Negev and at Nessana, examples of names based on the root зnn abound, and are written with Zeta, e.g., ζοναυν- /zonyan/, ζανν- /źni/n, the latter corresponding clearly with Nabataean Whilst and transcriptions from Syria in the form of ṭavv-. The Petra Papyri furnish only a single example, in the microtoponym αλμαζεκα, which likely corresponds to Classical Arabic المضيقة; for a complete discussion, see Al-Jallad, “Graeco-Arabica I,” pp. 135–37.


\textsuperscript{179} Note that there was no graphic difference between the early ฎ and ฎ as dots were rarely employed, and even so, never written on word-final ฎ.
In all of the pre-Islamic material in transcription, the original triphthong either survives or collapses to [ē]. The same appears to be the case in the transcriptions from the first Islamic century; alif-maṣārah is consistently given with Eta or Epsilon, but there is barely any evidence for the raising of long *ā to [ē] in other environments. In a splendid study by Van Putten, he demonstrates that the alif-maṣārah in the QCT has the value of [ē] as well, matching the first-century transcriptions. Therefore, the [ē] vowel is strictly the reflex of the earlier triphthong rather than the result of a secondary raising of long [ā].

In this respect, the PF differs from the pre-Islamic evidence, the QCT, and the first-Islamic-century Greek transcriptions. Final triphthongs behave just like the reflex of long [ā], that is, they are realized as [ā] in backed and labial environments, but as [ē] otherwise. Consider the comparison with the QCT below.

Table 20. Comparison of III-weak verbs and the quality of *ā in the QCT an PF

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Proto-Arabic</th>
<th>QCT</th>
<th>PF</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>*ʔaʕṭaya</td>
<td>اعطى</td>
<td>αγτα</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>*ʔatawa</td>
<td>اىى</td>
<td>ατε</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>*ʕāṣipun</td>
<td>عاصف</td>
<td>γασιφ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td><strong>ḏālika</strong></td>
<td>دلك</td>
<td>δέλικ</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Notes:
180 On the other hand, some evidence for the collapse of triphthongs to long vowels is found in Nabataean. In the ʿEn ʿAvdat inscription, the word ʾfdʾ can only be vocalized as [pʰedu] or [pʰedē], from earlier *pedaya. Note that the quality of the vowel represented as ʾ can be either [ā] or [ē] in Nabataean, e.g., dwšrʾ = Dusares = Hismaic dsirγy. In addition to this lexeme, the Nahal Hever papyri attest a few more words that may fall into this category, so sp” “to be or become clean” ṣfw; ʾl “to follow” (?); ṣly; for a list of Arabic vocabulary from these documents, see Yardeni, “Arabic Words in Nabataean Papyri.” Further afield, it should be noted that the collapse of triphthongs to [ā] is sporadically attested in Dadanitic, in the Ḥigāz; e.g., the divine name ṣuzzayV is spelled both as ʿz and ʿzh, the latter pointing toward the collapse of the final triphthong to [ā]. The grave inscription of Rbbl bn Hfʿm from Qaryat al-Fāw also attests this feature, as *banaya is spelled bn [banā]; Al-Jallad, “Genetic Background,” §3.1.
181 For example, consider μαυλε [mawlē] or ιαλε [yaʕlē], both with alif-maṣārah in Arabic orthography, while *ā remains [ā], even in the vicinity of [i] or [y]: Nasib [nāyib]; Σουφιαν [sufyān]. A few cases of raising are attested, but these constitute the exception, while alif-maṣārah is always spelled with an e-class vowel; see Al-Jallad, “Arabic of the Islamic Conquests,” p. 431.
182 Van Putten, “Triphthongs.”
183 Note that in an early Arabic inscription, most likely from the early decades of Islam, posted on Twitter (https://twitter.com/mohammed93athar/status/1047196644553515008, accessed 5/19/2019), the phrase ṣallāy “to bless, pray” was pronounced as [sallā].
184 It seems that III-w and III-y verbs in the C-stem had already merged at the Proto-Arabic stage, as this distinction is not found in the QCT or the pre-Islamic epigraphy, e.g., Safaitic ṣal “to raise” < ʾl w. I thank Dr. Marjin van Putten for this suggestion.
185 This is a hypothetical Proto-Arabic form, as the pronoun ḍālika cannot be reconstructed to the Proto-Arabic stage, in my opinion.
186 The long [ā] of this pronoun is never written plene in the QCT. If, however, it had the same value as the alif-maṣārah, it would have been written internally with a y. Thus, we can be sure that the first syllable was pronounced as [ḏā] rather than [ḏē].
The Relative Pronoun

The relative pronoun is attested twice in the document as ελλεδι, which matches the earliest Arabic papyri following the conquests,187 the earliest Middle Arabic,188 and the QCT. The document does not provide a context in which to observe whether gender or number concord was active. From the vista of the pre-Islamic epigraphy, the ?alla-based relative pronouns are unknown in the Levant. The Namārah inscription attests dw [ḏū],189 and Safaitic attests a declinable ḍ-based series, although neutralization of agreement is common.190 Only a single ?alla-form is attested, in a Dadanitic inscription discovered at Hegra (present-day Madâ’in Šalîh, Northwest Ḥiḡāz): the feminine singular ʾlt /ʔallatī/.191 This small piece of evidence combined with the QCT and Umayyad era documents led me to suggest that this particular relative pronoun was an innovation characterizing the Old Ḥiḡāzī dialect.192 Its presence in this document, therefore, suggests that the dialect was not a direct continuation of the pre-Islamic variety of the region, but may have its origins in the Arabian Peninsula. I will discuss this further in the next section.

The Definite Article

In nearly all the pre-Islamic attestations of the definite article in the north, the coda does not assimilate to the following coronal consonant.193 Moreover, until the sixth century CE, the vowel of the article is consistently noted with Alpha, suggesting an [a] or [ʔa] pronunciation. It is not until the mid-sixth century that we begin to encounter forms spelled as ελ in the Petra Papyri.194 In the dialect brought in by the conquerors, the definite article ελ is the norm, and assimilation is attested as well.195 This is contradicted by the orthography of the QCT, which provides no evidence for the assimilation of the article. It is, however, unclear whether this was simply an orthographic convention or a true reflection of its dialect. Assimilation of the definite article is attested in transcription in the Graeco-Arabic inscription A1 (pre-fourth century CE), for example αδαυρα = [ʔad-dawra] “the region.acc” (< *ʔal-dawra), but this text is certainly exceptional; nearly all other examples of the article from this region do not exhibit assimilation.

One may argue that the plene spelling of the coda of the article in the PF is an indication of the influence of Arabic orthography, but considering that early Judaeo-Arabic orthography,196

---

188 Blau, Grammar of Christian Arabic; note also that this form is often indeclinable.
189 See Macdonald’s contribution to Fiema et al., “Provincia Arabia,” for the latest discussion of this famous text.
190 Al-Jallad, Outline, pp. 85–88; Al-Jallad, Safaitic, p. 349.
191 This text is also discussed in Macdonald’s contribution to Fiema et al., “Provincia Arabia,” and more extensively in Mascitelli, L’Arabo in epoca preislamica, pp. 117–18.
192 Al-Jallad, Outline, pp. 12–14.
193 The linguistic reality of the non-assimilating article was first recognized by Macdonald, “Reflections on the linguistic map of pre-Islamic Arabia,” p. 51, discussed thoroughly in Al-Jallad, “Graeco-Arabica I,” pp. 167–70.
194 In the Petra Papyri, this occurs mostly in the later documents, from the second half of the sixth century, and mainly in the subscriptions Al-Jallad, “Graeco-Arabica I,” p. 169.
195 For example, the anthroponym οβδεραμαν= [ʔabder(r)aḥmān] (P.Ness 3 92, 43).
196 On documents written in early Judaeo-Arabic orthography, see Blau and Hopkins, “On Early Judaeo-Arabic Orthography.”
which also appears to be void of Arabic orthographic influence, noted the assimilation of the article, it seems much more likely that its shape in the PF reflects a phonetic reality. Thus, with the absence of assimilation and the raised quality of the vowel, the definite article finds its closest parallel with the sixth-century CE dialect of Petra and possibly the QCT.

Vowel Quality

The quality of the short high vowels was slightly lower in the pre-Islamic dialects of the Levant, including Nabataean and the nomadic dialects like Safaitic. These vowels are almost always transcribed with Epsilon and Omicron, and in contexts where an appeal to some scribal convention cannot be made. Thus, northern Old Arabic distinguished long and short vowels by quality as well as length. In the post-conquest transcriptions, the same vowels are transcribed with Iota and Omicron-Ypsilon, respectively, resembling more the conventional pronunciation of Classical Arabic. The exact quality of these vowels in the QCT is impossible to determine. The PF agrees with the post-conquest transcriptions, as short *i and *u are almost always transcribed with Iota and Omicron-Ypsilon.

Table 21. Comparison of short vowel qualities in the pre-Islamic inscriptions/papyri, first-Islamic-century papyri, and the PF

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>Pre-Islamic</th>
<th>Post-Conquest</th>
<th>PF</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>*i</td>
<td>ε = [e]</td>
<td>ι = [i]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>*u</td>
<td>ο = [o]</td>
<td>ου = [u]</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The pre-Islamic situation obtains even in the latest bilingual Arabic-Greek epigraph, the Ḥarrān Inscription (568 CE).

The Raising of *a to [e]

There is so far no evidence from the pre-Islamic period for the unconditioned raising of short *a to [e]. Occasionally, one encounters raising when *a is contiguous with a sibilant, a sound change typical of Aramaic and likely the result of Aramaic influence. In the sixth century, some evidence for pre-tonic raising is found at Petra. In the post-conquest transcriptions from Nessana and Egypt, however, conditioned a-raising is clearly attested. The reflex of *a is often spelled with Epsilon when it is in a pre-tonic open syllable not contiguous with an emphatic or back consonant, including /r/. This situation is not directly comparable to the PF, as I have shown.

---

197 This includes Greek graffiti produced by Arabic speakers, such as the bilingual Safaitic-Greek graffiti from the Syro-Jordanian Ḥarrah (see appendix 2). For a full discussion of the vowels, see Al-Jallad, “Graeco-Arabica I,” §4.

198 The realization [u], however, is encountered sometimes in stressed closed syllables Al-Jallad, “Graeco-Arabica I,” p. 145.

199 Only one dated example is known to me: Σευδα [sewdā] = CAr sawdāʔ, from the Negev, 411 CE. The raising of *a to [e] in pre-tonic open syllables, however, is commonly encountered in the Petra Papyri, e.g., ἀλμεναμ / al-menām/ = CAr al-manāmu; see Al-Jallad, “Graeco-Arabiça,” pp. 143–44.

The raising of long [ā] is even more rarely encountered. It is entirely unknown in the pre-Islamic material.\textsuperscript{201} Only a few examples of the conditioned raising of *ā to [ē] are found in the first-Islamic-century Greek transcriptions, always resulting from a neighboring i-vowel: for example, Ζηεδ [ziyēd], Μελεχ [mēlek], Αβδελεση [ʕabdelʕēṣi], late seventh to early eighth centuries CE.\textsuperscript{202} Coptic transcriptions provide some more evidence of this phenomenon, but these are usually a little later, dating from the late eighth century onward, for example, Αβουθεβιτ= [ʔabū-ṯēbit].\textsuperscript{203} The PF again shows a different situation: *ā is realized as [ē] unless there is an inhibiting factor, that is, an emphatic or a labial.

**The Feminine Ending**

The raising of *a to [e] gives the feminine ending its distinctive Levantine shape of [eh]. This realization is unknown in all of the pre-Islamic material and the post-conquest transcriptions.\textsuperscript{204} In the latter, the ending is always α, but whether it was followed by an [h] is impossible to tell.\textsuperscript{205} The shift of *at to [ah] in non-construct position probably set in by the second century BCE in some dialects, but was preserved much longer in the nomadic varieties.\textsuperscript{206}

**Prothesis**

Most forms of Arabic employ some manner of vowel or consonant + vowel prosthesis on the suffix conjugation of the Gt- and N-stems, the imperative of the G-stem, and in several biradical words, such as the reflex of *bin “son.” In Classical Arabic, the prothetic element is vocalic and is elided when preceded by a clitic, so inqalaba but fanqalaba “it overturned.” Safaitic appears to follow this pattern, for example, $w$-$stky$ or $qttl$.\textsuperscript{207} While verbs of this stem are not attested in the Arabic inscriptions written in the Nabataean script, the spelling of the word “son” as Qēn in Nabataean personal names would suggest that a similar strategy of prosthesis was in place, but that the prothetic syllable was QV.\textsuperscript{208} This matches the situation in the QCT, where such words are virtually always written with an alif.\textsuperscript{209} No N- or Gt-stems have yet been securely identified in the Dadanitic inscriptions, so it is unclear if prothesis

---

\textsuperscript{201} The raising of ā to ē is often identified in ASA to explain the writing of the dual ending on the verb with the y glyph: Stein, “Ancient South Arabian,” p. 1049; however, it is equally possible to view this as the generalization of the *-ay variant of the dual, which is present on the pronouns as well, to the verb.


\textsuperscript{203} These comes from CPR II 117 = CPR IV 111, 1, 3; see Legendre, “Perméabilité linguistique et anthroponymique,” on the transcription of Arabic names in Coptic.

\textsuperscript{204} Al-Jallad, “Graeco-Arabica I,” p. 156.

\textsuperscript{205} For example, γεμηλα [ǵemīlah] or Ουμαια [ʔumayyah], both from 685 CE Nessana, Al-Jallad, “Arabic of the Islamic Conquests,” p. 432.


\textsuperscript{207} Al-Jallad, Outline, p. 52.

\textsuperscript{208} To illustrate, ʾbn-ʾlqyny [ʔebno-ʔal-qayne]; ʾbn-qwmw [ʔebn-qawmo], Negev, Personal Names, p. 9; note also that these names seem to be concentrated in the Sinai. The consonantal reality of the first alif is confirmed by the spellings of such names in Safaitic with a glottal stop, thus ʾbnklbt for Nabataean ʾbn-klbt, Al-Jallad, Outline, p. 52.

\textsuperscript{209} The consonantal reality of this alif is perhaps confirmed by the fact that it remains stable even when preceded by a proclitic, so $\text{fa-ʔanqalabū}$ “so they returned” [fanqalabū] rather than [fanqalabū]. Marijn van Putten brings to my attention one example of the disappearance of the alif following a proclitic particle, (Q 3:17) “so they returned” [fa-ʔanqalabū] rather than [fanqalabū]. Marijn van Putten brings to my attention one example of the disappearance of the alif following a proclitic particle, (Q 3:17) “so they returned” [fanqalabū] rather than [fanqalabū]. Marijn van Putten brings to my attention one example of the disappearance of the alif following a proclitic particle, (Q 3:17) “so they returned” [fanqalabū] rather than [fanqalabū]. How-
Ahmad Al-Jallad

was operative there; however, for what it is worth, the word for son is consistently written as \textit{bn} rather than \textit{ʾbn}.\textsuperscript{210}

Now, unlike most Arabic dialects and Classical Arabic, the PF seems to employ a true \textit{ʔa}-syllable as the prothetic element, matching the QCT and, possibly, southwestern varieties of Nabataean. True \textit{ʔa}-prothesis is found in some modern dialects of the Ḥigāz as well, for example, \textit{ʔáḥtarag} “it burned down.”\textsuperscript{211}

\textbf{Reviewing the Linguistic Facts}

The evidence presented above leads to only one conclusion: the PF was not written in an ancient Levantine dialect of Arabic. It shares much more in common with the dialect(s) of the first-Islamic-century Greek transcriptions and the orthography of the QCT. This being the case, it would seem most likely that the document was composed in a dialect originally hailing from the Ḥigāz. One caveat, however, merits consideration: the Arab conquests did not mark the first time a dialect from the Ḥigāz was introduced to the Levant.

\textbf{Excursus: Dialect of Ghassān}

The Ghassānids are the most widely known Arabic-speaking group in the pre-Islamic Levant. While traditional histories regard them as immigrants from ancient Yemen, these tales must be understood within the context of ethnic myth-making in the Islamic period. Yemenite origin myths likely reflect the political constellations of the eighth century CE rather than historical reality.\textsuperscript{212} The earliest references to the Ghassānids come from the South Arabian inscriptions.\textsuperscript{213} Schiettecatte and Arbach locate the homeland of the Ghassānids based on these attestations in the north-central Ḥigāz.\textsuperscript{214} Robin identifies their territory as stretching from just south of al-ʿUlā to the wells of Sijā, 380 km north of Mecca, with the oasis of Yathrib as their possible capital.\textsuperscript{215}

\textsuperscript{210} This need not mean that the verbal stems did not exhibit prothesis; Hebrew realizes the word for “son” as \textit{ben} but the Td stem as \textit{hitpaʕʕel}, with \textit{hi}-prothesis.

\textsuperscript{211} Prochazka, \textit{Saudi Arabian Dialects}, p. 44.

\textsuperscript{212} On this subject, see the interesting book of Peter Webb, \textit{Imagining the Arabs}. For an excellent overview of the Ghassānids (=Jafnids), see the papers in Gnequand and Robin, \textit{Les Jafnides}.

\textsuperscript{213} The inscription ZI 75 (c. 235–55 CE) records the sending of an embassy to the king of Ghassān, while Abadān 1 (360 CE) mentions \textit{ʾrḍ ġs} “the land of Ghassan,” Robin and Gajda, “L’inscription du Wādī ʿAbadān”; Hayajneh and Ababneh, “God of Ġsn,” published a Safaitic inscription allegedly containing the god of “Ghassān,” but Al-Jallad and Macdonald, “Notes on Alleged Ghassān,” show that this is based on a misreading of the inscription.

\textsuperscript{214} Schiettecatte and Arbach, “Political Map,” Robin, “Les Arabes de Ḥimyar,” p. 191, has tentatively connected the \textit{Κασσανιτῶν} of Ptolemy (Geogr. VI.7.6), situated on the Yemeni Tihāmah, but it should be stressed that Semitic \textit{ɣ} is never transcribed with Greek Kappa, and the Sigma can reflect Semitic \textit{s}, \textit{s}’, \textit{s}”’, \textit{s}”, and \textit{d}, and so the margin of error here is great. Schiettecatte and Arbach, “Political Map,” p. 17, have suggested a connection with the \textit{gentes Casani} mentioned by Pliny (Nat.Hist. VI.32.8), but Villeneuve, Phillips, and Facey, “Une inscription latine de Farasān,” p. 159n78, make a convincing case for the connection with the toponym \textit{gīzān}.

Map 1. Political map of Arabia and the Middle East showing the tribes and kingdoms mentioned in inscription Jabal Riyām 2006–17 (© A. Émery & J. Schiettecatte, 2015; thanks to J. Schiettecatte for allowing me to reproduce this map)
In the fifth century CE, Ghassān broke up into small groups, and by the end of that century, an elite family of the tribe, the Banī Jafnah, moved to the southern Levant and entered into the service of Byzantium. This migration provides first demonstrable example of the movement of Ḥigāzī dialects of Arabic into the area. Relatively little is known about the dialect of the Ghassānids, however. The following fragments are the only examples of their Arabic known to me; all, with the exception of one, come from the sixth century:

1. The Thaʿlabah inscription from Eilat, mentioning a king of Ghassān; undated, but probably fifth century.

2. The Jabal Usays Inscription (528 CE), mentioning Al-Ḥārith the king.

3. The Sammāʾ lintel containing a prayer of protection for the phylarch Abū-Karib (SEG43.1089).

4. The Al-Mundhir Building at Ruṣāfa (SEG 7.188).

5. The mosaic inscription from Tall al-ʿUmayrī mentioning al-Mundhir.

6. The al-Mundhir martyrion from al-Burj (Wadd. 2562c).

These fragments offer us a tiny glimpse of the dialect of Ghassān in the sixth century. They obviously used the al-article, as shown by the Eilat and the Jebel Says inscription, both of which attest the word ʾl-mlk “the king.” The writing of the article in the name Al-Mundhir in Greek confirms, however, that it was pronounced as [al] rather than [el], but this may be simply on account of its utterance initial position. The Jebel Says inscription is in all ways identical in its orthography to the QCT—the word “upon,” “to,” Car Ġalā, is spelled with a final y, ʿly; the feminine ending at is written with h, as it is in the Thaʿlabah inscription. Following Larcher, this could be taken as evidence for the loss of final short vowels, which

217 I have excluded literary sources from our consideration because the path of transmission is not entirely clear and words would have had much more opportunity to be mutilated by the time they are recorded as compared to documentary texts. I have also excluded from consideration here the Zabad and Ḥarrān inscriptions, as nothing in them explicitly connects them to the Ghassanids.
218 Avner, Nehmé, and Robin, “Thaʿlabā.”
224 Given that this form of the article is attested from northwest to south-central Arabia, it is not a suitable feature, on its own, to localize the language. However, the al-article is notably absent in the present-day dialects of the Thīmāmah, the Ghassānīd homeland according to Islamic-era sources, where am and im articles are heard. It is entirely possible, of course, that the al-article spread to Ghassānīd speakers of Arabic once they left the Thīmāmah, but given that our first evidence of the Ghassānids comes from the northern Ḥigāz, this is yet another piece of evidence that undermines a prehistoric Yemeni origin for this group.
must precede the change of *a to *ah in non-pausal positions. All of these features, however, are also found in the older Nabataean layer of Arabic and so they, on their own, cannot stand as evidence for the introduction of a new dialect.

The clearest difference between the dialect attested in the sixth-century Ghassānid monuments and references and the old Levantine type comes in the realization of the vowels. The multiple transcriptions of the name Abū-Karib record a higher realization of the *a vowel of Karib:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{P.Petra IV 39.165: } & \text{Αβουχηρηβος} \\
\text{P.Petra IV 39.488: } & \text{Αβουχερεβου} \\
\text{Sammāʾ lintel: } & \text{Αβουχιριβ}
\end{align*}
\]

The various attestations of the phylarch Al-Mundhir also confirm that the realization of *u was [u] rather than [o]. Given, however, that it occurs in a stressed closed syllable, this realization can also be found in other pre-Islamic varieties.

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{Al-Mundhir building: } & \text{Αλαμουνδαρος} \\
\text{Tall al-ʿUmayrī mosaic: } & \text{Αλμουνδαρον}
\end{align*}
\]

The transcription of stressed short *a in Abū-Karib with an i/e-class vowel is not witnessed in the other pre-Islamic material, nor is it found in the first-Islamic-century material either. The earliest text in which we find this practice is the PF, for example, χεριβου [šeribū] “they drank” or γέβελ [ǧebel] “mountain,” where it is clearly stressed. While such a connection is enticing, it must also be remembered that the change of a to e is typologically very common and could here reflect a parallel development.

None of the features discussed above contradict a Ḥīgāzī origin for the Arabic of the Ghassānids, but the diagnostic features to prove it are not attested. The distinction between their dialect and the pre-sixth-century Arabic dialects of the region rests on the realization of short *a in one word—an interesting phenomenon to be sure, but hardly enough to make overarching claims. Nevertheless, if the Ghassānids brought in a new variety of Arabic, it seems that it would have been restricted to their family group, as the transcriptions at Nessana and Petra show that the earlier Levantine varieties persisted.

## Bringing It All Together

Bringing these separate aspects of the PF together to form a coherent narrative is challenging. Let us summarize the facts so far: the paleographic argument suggests that the document was likely produced sometime in the ninth century CE. The transcription system as well implies a late origin, though any time after the fourth century CE is within the realm of possibility, although a post-eighth-century date is best supported by the evidence. Given the fact that the transcription system is well thought out and reflects a degree of linguistic thinking about Arabic independently of the Arabic script, it is unlikely an ad-hoc production but more probably

---

227 The extra Alpha between the article and munḏar likely has to do with Greek phonetics rather than the Arabic. The final Alpha, which is consistent in all attestations, suggests that the phylarch’s name was actually al-munḏar, a passive form.
Ahmad Al-Jallad

reflects a tradition of writing Arabic in Greek letters. As such, the document before us does not necessarily have to be the original, but could be a copy of an earlier text. The language of the text is certainly not a pre-Islamic Levantine variety, but rather is closest to the variety attested in the first-Islamic-century Greek transcriptions. One of its unique features, the realization of stressed *a as [e], is attested in the dialect of the Ghassanids.

At this point, we may venture a hypothesis for the development of an Arabo-Greek script. Let us return to Macdonald’s line of reasoning once more: the invention of this writing system makes best sense in a context when literacy in Arabic could not be assumed for Arabic-speaking Christians—the pre-Islamic period is certainly a possibility, but faces difficulty in light of the phonology of the Greek of the transcription system. A more likely date, suggested briefly above, is the middle of the eighth century CE, when Christians of the southern Levant were becoming increasingly Arabophone. In the earliest period, knowledge of written Arabic may have been lacking, and so Arabic-speaking Christians could have attempted to render their vernacular in a script they already knew, Greek. This is comparable to early Judaeo-Arabic, where it seems that communities of Arabic-speaking, yet not Arabic-writing, Jews drew up documents in their Arabic vernacular written in Hebrew letters, the alphabet to which they were accustomed.

The systematic and conventional nature of this transcription system suggests that it belonged to a tradition of writing Arabic in Greek, rather than being a one-off attempt. It is impossible to know how long such a tradition may have existed. By the ninth century, both written and spoken Arabic gained at the expense of Greek. Knowledge and use of the Arabic script in a Christian context seem to have put an end to the Arabo-Greek script at its embryonic stage. The PF, unique among the documents in the repository in which it was discovered, may reflect the very end of a short-lived Arabo-Greek writing tradition. This script, used or copied perhaps for the last time here, ultimately gave way to glosses/translations in the Arabic script proper. If this line of reasoning is correct, then the best date for the invention of the writing system, and perhaps the original copy of this text, would have been the middle or late eighth century, while the document itself would come from about a century later.228

The language of the document suggests that these early Christian communities adopted (one of) the dialect(s) of the Arab conquerors, rather than a pre-existing Levantine variety of Arabic. It is possible that the dialect of the Ghassānids, spoken in the region before the conquests, was similar to the Arabic of the conquests on account of their shared geographic origin, but more evidence is needed to conclusively demonstrate this. What language the Christian communities of the southern Levant were switching from is impossible to know. Christian Palestinian Aramaic is certainly likely, but we cannot exclude that large numbers of Christians were speaking pre-Islamic Levantine dialects of Arabic, and switched to the dialect of the conquerors just as Aramaic speakers did.

One may also suggest that the transcription system was devised during the same period in which the document was produced, that it does not belong to a tradition. While certainly possible, this hypothesis is challenged by the structural features of the script. No other examples of impromptu renderings of Arabic in Greek letters show such uniformity and conventionalization. Thus, I find the former scenario to account both for the features of the script and the purpose of the document.

228 The transcription system may be compared to the Greek transcription system of Hebrew in the Hexapla, which is consistent in many ways and which continued to be copied over the centuries. On its linguistic features, see Janssens, Studies in Hebrew Linguistics.
Chapter 4

Old Arabic, Middle Arabic, and Old Ḥigāzī

The language of early Christian Arabic translations has never been regarded as a pure reflection of the vernacular. Blau goes so far to state that these texts “are so awkward and literal that they are hardly worth being called Arabic at all.” While this has mostly to do with a strict adherence to the syntax and wording of the original languages, Blau also considers these early texts as layered, containing features from Classical Arabic, Middle Arabic, and Pseudo-Classical elements. In a way, this proclamation does not begin from the data, but from preconceived notions of what a variety of Arabic can be. The very idea, however, that writers were aiming at a higher register and failing seems to undermine the purpose of the earliest Christian Middle Arabic materials—to be in “a clear language that ordinary people understand” (see “Dating the Document” in chapter 2).

In this light, the most intriguing insight of Corriente’s discussion is his proposal that the language of the PF reflected a vernacular form of Arabic, at least in terms of its phonology and morphology. And while the discussion of its linguistic features more or less rules out Corriente’s “Nabaṭī” hypothesis, the orthography and purpose do support the fact that it is based on a spoken model. Its linguistic profile, in light of Old Arabic, calls us to reconsider “Middle Arabic” as a diachronic conceptual category.

Middle Arabic is generally regarded as a sociolinguistic phenomenon, referring to a kind of Arabic that sits somewhere intermediate between Classical Arabic and the spoken dialects, regardless of their location in space or time. Thus, the category encompasses some 1,400 years of Arabic’s history—from the earliest written documents, such as documentary papyri from the first Islamic century, to spoken forms of Modern Standard Arabic. The definition itself rests on an essentialistic identification of what constitutes a spoken dialect. Most scholars have worked on the assumption that vernacular Arabic was, since the beginning of Arabic’s recorded history, more or less identical with the modern vernaculars. In contrast, the written variety was always the same as the codified literary register of Islamic civilization. This anachronistic approach does not give the capacity for older spoken forms of Arabic to differ in significant ways from the present-day counterparts, even though over a millennium has passed between the two. Thus, any form of Arabic that is not, on the one hand, identical to a modern dialect, often of the same

229 Blau, Grammar of Christian Arabic, 1:54.
230 Corriente, “From Old Arabic to Classical Arabic.”
231 Khan, “Middle Arabic.”
232 Hopkins, “The Earliest Texts in Judaeo-Middle Arabic,” p. 241, presents a more flexible view of Middle Arabic, suggesting that it has a vertical and horizontal dimension. Vertically, it refers to a historically intermediate stage between Old Arabic and Neo-Arabic, similar to Corriente’s Nabaṭī Arabic, while horizontally it has the sociolinguistic sense advocated by Khan.
Ahmad Al-Jallad

region in which a particular texts was composed, or Classical Arabic, on the other hand, is considered an artificial “lect” rather than a true, living variety of Arabic.

To illustrate, let us consider two common grammatical constructions: the negative preterite construction *lam yafʕal* and the relative pronoun *ʔallāḍī*. Both of these are usually regarded as (pseudo-)literary elements in Middle Arabic texts, namely, features from the literary register used either correctly or incorrectly alongside vernacular features. Such a prioristic reasoning always results in the conclusion that their presence in a text is due to the influence of or the aiming at the Classical Arabic literary standard—meaning both of these features could have never been part of the spoken language. When forms are encountered that do not perfectly match their Classical Arabic counterparts, they are considered hypercorrections, imperfect approximations of the literary register. The latter interpretation applies, for example, to instances where the incorrect mood is used following the *lam* negative adverb. According to Classical Arabic grammar, the jussive of the imperfect should follow *lam*. However, the ancient mood distinctions in the verb were eventually lost in all Arabic dialects, and so there is nothing to rule out an intermediate stage where a generalized imperfect was used following *lam*, before the entire construction was completely replaced by the competing *mā fālala* syntagm.

Likewise, one often encounters in “Middle Arabic” texts a generalized relative pronoun *ʔallāḍī*, which does not decline for gender or number. The declension of the relative pronoun is lost in nearly all Arabic dialects, and so could we not here be witnessing a stage in which this has happened in the vernacular? Indeed, the generalized *ʔallāḍī* is met with in several spoken varieties of Arabic even today, and these must have gone through a stage in which the original declension broke down.

There can be no doubt, especially in later texts and certainly in spoken Modern Standard Arabic, that hypercorrections and borrowing from the literary register are responsible for the features not found in the contemporary dialects. However, there is little reason to assume this for ancient times. In fact, the emerging picture of Old Arabic from documentary sources proves that such an assumption cannot be maintained. No texts in Classical Arabic, as such, have been encountered in the pre-Islamic period. Instead, the entire corpus Old Arabic, across all scripts, would qualify as “Middle Arabic” according to the present definition. Yet the very idea that authors in the first century CE were aiming at a language codified in the eighth or ninth century and falling short underscores the anachronistic nature of this linguistic category. If, however, we admit that features that are typical of the modern dialects can mix with features typical of Classical Arabic in a natural variety in the pre-Islamic period, why could this not be the case in the early centuries of Islam as well? This is in fact what is witnessed in Safaitic. The dialects of these inscriptions lack nunation, have lost final short vowels in most cases, possesses a 3ms clitic pronoun [oh] and feminine singular [ah] (all typically “Neo-Arabic” features), but makes use of the *lam yafʕal* construction as a negative preterite, a hallmark feature of Classical Arabic. In an Arabic inscription from the Ḥigāz in the Dadanitic script, the relative pronoun *ʔlt (= ʔallatī)* is attested alongside the 3fs verb form, *bnh* (*banah < *banat*), a

---

233 The most common form of the relative pronoun in the modern Arabic dialects is *illa*, the etymology of which is uncertain, but could certainly derive from *ʔallāḍī*. Reflexes of older forms are found in the Maghreb, *ḋ*, which is most reasonably derived from the Old Arabic relative pronoun *dV*. D-forms are also found in South Arabia today; Behnstedt, *Die Dialekte von Ṣa‘dah*, p. 84; Behnstedt, *Dialect Atlas of North Yemen*, p. 74.

234 For a clear example of this, see the early to mid-nineteenth- to twentieth-century letters by Gulf rulers, edited by Holes, “Letters of Gulf Rulers.”
dialectal feature found today in Yemen. An Old Arabic inscription in the Hismaic script from Wādī Ram attests a living case system and the merger of the voiced interdental fricative and dental stop. The examples go on.

The pre-Islamic situation bears witness to a great deal of Arabic dialectal diversity, but this diversity does not match the features typical of the Arabic dialects today. Using only the modern dialects and Classical Arabic, therefore, to understand the component features of an eighth- or ninth-century text seems to me to be the wrong approach. To properly situate not only these early texts, but the QCT as well, into the history of Arabic, I believe we should also approach the material from the opposite chronological direction. In other words, we must ask: how do the features of the first-Islamic-century documents and the QCT compare to the pre-Islamic epigraphic record, which extends right up to the sixth century? Only in this context can we understand the linguistic position of the PF and related early Middle Arabic documents.

The QCT and First-Islamic-Century Documents: Taking Orthography Seriously

Medieval and modern scholars have generally taken the reading traditions (qirāʔāt) as more or less a close representation of the pronunciation of the language in which the Quran was originally composed. A few skeptics have appeared, but the radical revisions to the history of the text they proposed have not won many followers, as their scenarios have failed to find the proper degree of substantiation in the evidence itself. It is nevertheless clear for any reader to see that the pronunciation of the Quran diverges in many important ways from its orthography. Points where the text and orthography disagree are usually understood as the result of orthographic conventions. Orthographic conventions, however, do not spontaneously emerge at random. In most of the world’s languages, these reflect either an older stage of the language or the adaptation of a writing system from another language.

David Testen in 2005 produced a fundamental article (“Literary and Hijazi Arabic”) that introduced a fresh way of thinking about the Quranic text. He attempted to extract facts about the pre-Islamic dialect of the Ḥigāz, not from the remarks of eighth-century Arabic Grammar-ians, but from the orthography of the Quran itself. While not explicitly spelled out, the paper

236 On this text, see Macdonald, “Clues.” Al-Jallad, *Madaba* line 1.
237 For example, Vollers, *Volkssprache*, proposed a theory in which the Quran was composed in a type of Neo-Arabic without case endings altogether and was then later corrected to the high variety with case endings. No independent evidence of this Neo-Arabic Quran exists, and the orthography of the Quran does exhibit case inflection; see Van Putten and Stokes, “Case in the Quran.” Even more drastic is the theory of Luxenberg, *Die syro-aramäische Lesart des Koran*, which claimed that much of the Quran has been entirely misread by Muslim tradition and was in fact originally composed in a Syro-Arabic hybrid. This view has been rejected by most scholars. See the important review of de Blois, “Review of Die syro-aramäische Lesart.”
238 Traditionally, scholars have attempted to explain these obvious divergences through a phenomenon called “pausal spelling,” that is, all words are written as if they were in utterance final position and therefore lost final short vowels and nunation. The strongest advocate of this view is Diem, “arabischen Orthographie III.” For a brilliant refutation of pausal spellings, see van Putten and Stokes, “Case in the Quranic Consonantal Text.” Moreover, it should be pointed out that not all divergences in spelling and pronunciation of the Quran can be chalked up to pause—the pronunciation of the alif-maqsūrah, original y, for example, as ā has nothing to do with pause.
Ahmad Al-Jallad offers this important methodological intervention: the QCT should be regarded as a language in its own right and its orthography studied as such, rather than assuming orthographic conventions at every point of disagreement. This approach has been spear-headed by Marijn van Putten and others, who have produced several articles, laying out the key features of the QCT’s phonology and morphology. The results form our most complete record of the Arabic dialect of the pre-Islamic Hijāz, which had long been buried under Classical Arabic pronunciations. Even if we assume that the QCT represents an archaizing register, it is still far, in its pronunciation, from Classical Arabic. The main substantive points from the studies carried out so far follow:

The triphthongs of the QCT do not collapse to [ā], but rather: *aya > [ē] and *awa > [ā].

Final short vowels had disappeared, but the case system remained intact otherwise.

The feminine ending was realized as [ah] in context and not just pause.

The glottal stop obtained in some environments, but was lost in others.

The stress was penultimate.

In addition to these points, I would add that the prothetic syllable of the N-stem and Gt-stem had the shape ؕa rather than i, reflected in the QCT orthography as a. The phonetic reality of this spelling has been argued for above (Chapter 2, “The Verb”).

Beyond the orthography, three grammatical features seem to be unique to the QCT and the first-Islamic-century papyri, and they are also attested exclusively in the epigraphy of the Hijāz.

1. The ؕalla-Based Relative Pronoun:

The ؕalla-based relative pronoun only occurs in one inscription in the Dadanitic script from the Hijāz. This pronoun was originally a demonstrative form, cognate with Hebrew hallāz(e), and I would suggest possibly Ugaritic hnd. Given the absence of this feature in the Levant, south-central Arabia and the Yemen in ancient times, I have placed this innovation in the Hijāz.

239 Van Putten, “Triphthongs.”
240 Van Putten and Stokes, “Case in the Quran.”
241 Van Putten, “Feminine Ending.”
242 Van Putten, “Hamza in the Quranic Consonantal Text.”
243 Al-Jallad, “Sūrat al-Baqārah.”
245 While texts in the Arabic language proper have not yet appeared in southwest Arabia, the Arabic-like inscription of Ḳbd bn Ḥfʿm at Qaryat al-Ṭāʾf attests the plural relative pronoun ʿāw, but in a formulaic context: ʿāw ʾl ḡlwn “those of the lineage of ḡlwn”; see Al-Jallad, “Genetic Background,” on the features of this text.
2. The Construction ?an yafʕala:

The verbal complement in the Old Arabic of the Levant and North Arabia takes the form of an infinitive.\(^{246}\) This construction has been mainly replaced in the QCT by a subordinated clause introduced by ?an. I would identify ?an as the reflex of the definite article, which can introduce subordinated clauses in Arabic and in other Semitic languages.\(^{247}\) Again, in the ancient epigraphy, the feature is attested only in the Ḥigāz, in a single, fragmentary Dadanitic inscription from al-ʿUlā:

AH 203

1: hm ---- [d]-
2: gbt/ʔnl/ʔk{nl}----
3: l-{-h}/l/l/d/f r.dy [-h] ----
4: w ʔḥrt -h {d}----

“[PN made an offering for] Ḏū Ghaybat that he may have offspring so satisfy him and his progeny”

I would therefore consider this a Ḥigāzī innovation as well. In most modern dialects, however, a serial verb construction is used rather than the infinitive or the ?an yafʕala construction. In some Naḡḍī dialects, the infinitive still seems productive: b-yirǧiʕ-k al-ḡārah “he intends to come back to you to raid,”\(^{248}\) suggesting that perhaps the ?an yafʕala construction had not spread to the east.

3. The Distal Forms ḏālika, tilka

The Proto-Arabic proximal demonstratives were likely \(*dā\) and \(*tī\), attested as such in the Ḥarrān inscription (ms \(dʾ\) [dā]) and the Namārah inscription (rs \(ty\) [tī]) and possibly in the Safaitic inscriptions, although the vocalization is not recoverable.\(^{249}\) The Proto-Semitic deictic element \(k\) is appended to these forms to create the distal in most varieties of Arabic, and such forms are mentioned by the Arabic Grammarians.\(^{250}\) Distal pronouns are not attested in northern Old Arabic varieties, but one very tentative attestation of the form \(tk\) in Safaitic may suggest a form with a simple \(k\) suffix.\(^{251}\)

The QCT along with the first Islamic century papyri attest a form with an \(l\)-element between the demonstrative base and the distal particle, producing from the original proximal set ḏālika and tilka. The \(l\)-element has traditionally been regarded as a reflex of the asseverative

---


\(^{247}\) The original form of the article \(*han\) would yield ?an in Arabic, Al-Jallad, “Yusapʿiḥ or Yuhapʿiḥ.” I would argue that as the definite article form \(ʔal\) diffused across Arabic, replacing other attested variants (namely \(hāḥ\) and \(ʔa\)ḥ), both reflected in the Safaitic inscriptions), older forms survived in positions that were not transparently analyzable as the definite article. For the full argument, see Al-Jallad, “What Is ANA?”

\(^{248}\) Ingham, *Najdi Arabic*, p. 121.

\(^{249}\) Al-Jallad, *Outline*, pp. 79–85.

\(^{250}\) For a list, see Fischer, A Grammar of Classical Arabic, §275. Note also that in the QCT, addressee agreement is sometimes observed, e.g., ḏālikum when referring to a plural. This is certainly a secondary development based on the homophony between the distal element ka and the 2ms clitic pronoun ka.

\(^{251}\) Al-Jallad, *Outline*, p. 84; Al-Jallad, *Safaitic*, p. 349.
While this is certainly possible, I would like to suggest a second interpretation—these forms are related to the Aramaic distal form znk. The n in the Arabic demonstrative, however, shifted to l before the distal particle, a sound change paralleled in the definite article. This interpretation is supported by the distal dual, which has the shape ms ǧānnika and fs tānnika in the nominative. I parse these as follows:

\[
\begin{array}{cccc}
\text{ḏān} & \text{n} & \text{ka} \\
\text{DEM} & \text{DUAL,NOM} & \text{NI} & \text{DISTAL}
\end{array}
\]

If this interpretation is correct, then I would propose the following reconstruction:

\[
\begin{align*}
\text{ḏā-n-ka} & \rightarrow \text{ḏānka} \rightarrow \text{ḏalka} \rightarrow \text{reanalysis} \rightarrow \text{ḏālika} \\
\text{t-n-ka} & \rightarrow \text{ṭīnka} \rightarrow \text{ṭīlka} \rightarrow \text{ṭīlka}
\end{align*}
\]

The attested masculine-singular form is obtained once ḏālka is reanalyzed on account of its phonetic similarity to the nominal pattern CāCiC. Alternatively, the long ā could have been restored from the singular ḥādā, and an epenthetic vowel i subsequently inserted to break up the super-heavy syllable, ḏālka > ḏālika. The appearance of an i-vowel for this purpose is found in the dual paradigm described above. The reason why such a reanalysis was not possible for the feminine singular is that the proximal demonstrative was too distinct to permit leveling, tilka but ḥāḏih(i).

Regardless of their developmental paths, such distal forms with an intermediate l seem to be unique to Arabic, and from the vista of the pre-Islamic inscriptions, to the QCT and the first-Islamic-century material. This picture accords with the statements of the early Arab grammarians, who regarded the demonstrative form ḏālika as a Ḥiḡāzī feature while ḏāka was considered to be Tamīmī (eastern) isogloss.

In addition to these innovations, a few shared grammatical developments can be identified in the QCT and possibly in the first-Islamic-century papyri. The first is that nunation and final short vowels were lost, leading to a reduced case system. This contrasts with the northern Old Arabic that, at least for a while, retained the accusative on definite nouns as well. The feminine ending had shifted to ʾah following the loss of final short vowels—the form

\[\text{ḏānka} \rightarrow \text{ḏālka} \rightarrow \text{ḏālika} \rightarrow \text{ṭīlka} \rightarrow \text{ṭīlka}\]

\[\text{ḏā-n-ka} > \text{ḏānka} > \text{ḏalka} > \text{reanalysis} > \text{ḏālika}
\]

\[\text{t-n-ka} > \text{ṭīnka} > \text{ṭīlka} > \text{ṭīlka}\]

\[\text{ḏānlika} \rightarrow \text{ḏānnika} \rightarrow \text{ḏālika} \rightarrow \text{ḏāka} \rightarrow \text{ḏālika} \rightarrow \text{ṭīlka} \rightarrow \text{ṭīlka}\]

252 Huehnergard, “‘lu/law in Semitic,” argues that the l- is a reflex of the asseverative la-, but does not provide an explanation for its realization as li in the masculine singular and simple as l in the feminine singular. Hasselbach, “Demonstratives in Semitic,” p. 21, suggests that it is a distinct demonstrative element li, which also forms the second syllable of the Hebrew plural ṭellē, yet she does not explain the final diphthong (Hebrew word-final ē < *ay), and that while the element supposedly marks a degree of the distal in Arabic, it has no such function in Hebrew, Aramaic, or Akkadian.

253 The original form of the definite article *han would have yielded ṭan in Arabic. The Classical Arabic form of the article can be explained through irregular assimilation of the n to coronals and dissimilation to l in other environments.

254 Note that Hasselbach, “Demonstratives in Semitic,” p. 10, attributes the doubled n to irregular assimilation, dānlika to ġānnika.

255 I thank Dr. Marijn van Putten for pointing out this dissimilarity as a possible obstacle for the restoration of the long vowel.

256 While distal forms are missing in most of the central Arabian material, no such l-forms are found in South Arabia.

257 Van Putten and Stokes, “Case in the Quran.”

258 Al-Jallad and al-Manaser, “New Epigraphica I.”
at obtains throughout Arabia, including in the north, with the exception of the Nabataean dialect. 259 Finally, I would argue that the emphatic interdental and lateral were realized as voiced, in contrast to the Old Arabic of the north, where they were voiceless. This latter point cannot be proven for the QCT, but it is certainly the case in the first-Islamic-century papyri, as evidenced by transcriptions. 260

The features discussed above form the linguistic profile of Old Ḥiḡāzī, as late as the seventh century CE. 261

From the QCT to the First-Islamic-Century Material and Beyond

Now, the Old Ḥiḡāzī of the QCT, based on its consonantal skeleton, attests a very unstable situation. The case system exhibits a high degree of paradigmatic asymmetry following the loss of final short vowels, something that would have also affected the verbal mood system. Its language, therefore, seems to capture a transitional moment between a case-bearing and fully caseless variety of Arabic. The following tables are based on Van Putten and Stokes, “Case in the Qur’an.”

Table 22. The case system of the QCT

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Triptotes</th>
<th>Indefinite</th>
<th>Definite</th>
<th>Construct</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Nominative</td>
<td>faʕl</td>
<td>al-faʕl</td>
<td>faʕl(u)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Genitive</td>
<td>faʕl</td>
<td>al-faʕl</td>
<td>faʕl(i)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Accusative</td>
<td>faʕlā</td>
<td>al-faʕl</td>
<td>faʕl(a)</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Five nouns</th>
<th>Indefinite</th>
<th>Definite</th>
<th>Construct</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Nominative</td>
<td>ʔab</td>
<td>al-ʔab</td>
<td>ʔabū</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Genitive</td>
<td>ʔab</td>
<td>al-ʔab</td>
<td>ʔabi</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Accusative</td>
<td>ʔabā</td>
<td>al-ʔab</td>
<td>ʔabā</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

259 In Safaitic and Hismaic, the ending is t in all contexts while Nabataean shows reflexes of both forms. The sound change is not known in South Arabia or in the Thamudic inscriptions from the Najd, although the extant texts may not reflect varieties of Arabic at all. In the transitional material attested across North Arabia, but concentrated in the northern Ḥiḡāz, the sound change of at > ah appears to have operated; see Nehmé, “Arabic or Aramaic?”

260 In the first-Islamic-century transcriptions, both z and d are given with Delta, e.g., ʼaνδαλα [ḥaṁzala] and ἁλχαδρα [al-ḥaḍrāʔ]; Al-Jallad, “Arabic of the Islamic Conquests,” pp. 427–28.

261 There are more features to be sure, but these will be discussed in detail in a future publication.
While Van Putten and Stokes do not discuss the verbal mood system, the phonological developments, according to their reconstruction, would have created a similar degree of syncretism in the mood system of the QCT. The jussive, for example, would only be distinguished from the indicative and subjunctive throughout the paradigm in weak roots, comparable to Hebrew.
Table 23. The mood system of the QCT

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Strong roots</th>
<th>Medial weak</th>
<th>Final weak</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Ind</td>
<td>yaʃʕal</td>
<td>yakūn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sub</td>
<td>yaʃʕalūn</td>
<td>yakūnūn</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jus</td>
<td>yaʃʕal</td>
<td>yakūnū</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

These features, I would argue, suggest that the papyri and the QCT belong to the same linguistic strain, to the exclusion of previously attested forms of Arabic. The first-Islamic-century papyri exhibit all of the isoglosses of Old Ḥīgāzī I discussed in the previous section. In addition to this, they share with the QCT some substandard and non-Classical forms. For example, the jussive of kāna is often spelled without a nūn, so QCT 16:120, "and he was not one of the heretics," which is also found in the early papyri: "and if he does not have a son." These are rarely encountered in later texts, poetry aside.

Yet, while the QCT is perfectly consistent in its deployment of mood and case according to the system described above, the language of the papyri shows some inconsistencies. The mood of the verb following lam is sometimes a long imperfect (either indicative or subjunctive) rather than the jussive. Consider this example from 700 CE:

"ولم يكون عندنا بعده"

"and we have nothing more after this"

The traditional explanation of such a form is that the author was a speaker of Neo-Arabic and incorrectly produced a Classical Arabic syntagm. I think a more plausible explanation is that we are beginning to witness the breakdown of the living mood system of Old Ḥīgāzī, where a generalized imperfect can be used following the negative adverb lam. In other words, this highly assymetrical system was beginning to give way to analogical leveling, producing a more uniform paradigm, but ultimately resulting in the elimination of older morphological categories. Inconsistencies in the document reflect changes in a living language. This would also apply to other occasional differences, such as the absence of the indefinite accusative and the use of ʔalladī as a generalized relative pronoun. Thus, the papyri from the first Islamic century reflect a later, changed form of Old Ḥīgāzī.

This brings us back to the PF. In all the ways discussed above, the PF shares the same isoglosses with Old Ḥīgāzī that the early papyri do. Yet unlike those texts which were written within the context of an Arabic scribal tradition, the PF reflects the vernacular manifestation of this dialect. In other words, it documents a spoken variety of Old Ḥīgāzī, likely a direct development of the prestige dialect spread during the Arab conquests.

The Islamic conquests were a multilingual affair, but the ruling elite hailed from the Ḥīgāz; the QCT was produced in a form of Old Ḥīgāzī, and its linguistic features substantiate that. The first-Islamic-century papyri belong to the same linguistic stream, and so I

262 P.Heid.Arab. I 4 .7.
Ahmad Al-Jallad

Ahmad Al-Jallad

would argue that the prestige spoken register, and its closely related written register, in the Umayyad period were Old Ḥigāzī. This would have been the variety that non-Arabic speaking communities adopted as both a spoken and written language in the earliest periods.

Later dialects, like those documented in Judaeo- and Christian Arabic texts, may also stem from this variety of Arabic. While even further removed in some ways, they do exhibit several of the hallmark features of Old Ḥigāzī, most notably, the realization of the prothetic syllable in Gt- and N-stems as a true ئa syllable:

 kd ʔankasar qalbī “my heart had been broken”

While Khan, noticing that this same phenomenon occurs in the PF, attributes it to an orthographic pseudo-classicism, according to our scenario, this could be interpreted as evidence that both texts have the same dialectal origin. Thus, it is possible that the earliest “Middle Arabic” could reflect the latest stage of Old Ḥigāzī, a continuation of the language of the first-Islamic-century papyri.

I should now state two things clearly: I am not arguing that Old Ḥigāzī is the source of all modern dialects of Arabic. On the contrary, I would view the present dialect map as the accumulation of centuries of migration and mixing, and that the current dialects do not reflect a monogenetic past at all. Yet, in the first Islamic century and shortly after, there was naturally far less dialectal diversity outside of Arabia and Syria, and the extant early texts could reflect a monogenetic descent from Old Ḥigāzī. This is not to say that only Old Ḥigāzī spread following the conquests, but that it was the prestige dialect adopted by non-Arabic speakers and was the source of the pre-grammational literary register.

No dialect identical in its entirety to Old Ḥigāzī survives today, but this should not be surprising given that over 1,300 years have passed. The old syntagms associated with the mood system have completely disappeared, replaced by prevalent pre-verbal marking and serial verb constructions. The only surviving case, the accusative, has been reanalyzed as an adverbial marker. The relative pronoun ?allaḏī has been reduced to illi or replaced by it, if this relative pronoun has another etymological source. The spread of illi at the expense of other relative pronouns is a phenomenon that continues in the Maghreb and South Arabia. Whether this was the result of dialect leveling over the centuries or true dialectal replacement through subsequent migrations from the peninsula remains to be sorted out, but is beyond the scope of the present discussion.

264 See the dissertation of Phillip Stokes (UT-Austin) on the development of the case system in these varieties, which differs from Classical Arabic and Old Ḥigāzī, as reflected in the QCT and in the documents from the Umayyad period.
265 Quoted from Khan, “Orthography and Reading,” p. 402, from MS T-S Ar. 8.3 fol. 16v.
266 Khan “Orthography and Reading,” p. 402.
267 The excellent studies published in Holes, Historical Dialectology, demonstrate this fact beyond a doubt.
268 The areal spread of later dialectal features across the Arabic-speaking world can give the impression of an ancient origin. Consider, for example, the verb šāf “to see,” which is nearly pan-Arabic today. This verb, however, must have a rather late origin, as it is absent in Maltese, while in Tunisian Arabic it is the normal verb for “to see.” This indicates that it spread to Tunisia after Maltese split off. The same is true of the Levant. The verb is not known in Cyprus, but is common throughout the present-day Levantine dialects. The older verb to see qašaʕ is frozen as a presentative šaʕ <*ʔšaʕ. The persistence of spoken forms of Old Ḥigāzī to a late point might be reflected in the thirteenth-century Arabic manuscripts in Coptic letters from Egypt; on its linguistic features, see Blau, “Middle Arabic Egyptian Text.”
Second, I am not arguing against Middle Arabic as a sociolinguistic phenomenon. There are mixed texts, to be sure, but here chronology is key. Before the emergence of Classical Arabic in late eighth and ninth centuries, it makes little sense to characterize variation of the type discussed above as the result of aiming at a standard that did not yet exist. Moreover, many of the previous features, such as the ʔa-prothetic syllable, do not make sense in the context of aiming toward a Classical Arabic standard from a Neo-Arabic starting point.

Old Ḥigāzī in theGrammatical Sources

The Ḥigāz was one of the main taxonomical categories for the Arabic Grammarians, and for this reason, one cannot take for granted that the features subsumed under it always reflect true Ḥigāzī speech. The division of dialectal features between Ḥigāzī (western) and Tamīmī (eastern) often seems to have been purely conventional. This adds to the general problem of the traditional grammatical and lexographical method: the ancient spoken dialects were never recorded for their own sake. Indeed, as Rabin has astutely pointed out, we possess not even a single sentence in pure dialect; all that we have is filtered through the lens of the language of the poems.

Nevertheless, some of the features attributed to the Ḥigāzī dialect by the Arabic grammarians align with our reconstruction of Old Ḥigāzī.

1. The eastern dialects were characterized by the elision of unstressed short vowels, while these were maintained in the Ḥigāz, so eastern faʕla vs. Ḥigāzī faʕila. The PF sides with the latter, displaying forms like χεβιγου [šebiʕū].

2. The third-person-suffix pronouns did not harmonize with the genitive case vowel, as in the PF.

3. The realization of alif-maṣūrah was [ai], and so the Ḥigāzī supposedly said ḥublay for ḥublā and ʔafʕay for ʔafʕā. Such forms are directly witnessed in the first-Islamic-century papyri (cf. μαυλε [mawlē]).

4. The loss of the glottal stop, at least in certain environments, is something that characterized the Ḥigāzī dialects for the Arabic Grammarians, and is also found in the PF and the first-Islamic-century papyri.

5. The ʔalla-based relative pronouns were in use.

There are a few less certain features collected by Rabin that could be interpreted in a way to

---

269 For an excellent discussion on this topic, see den Heijer, “Middle and Mixed Arabic.”
270 Rabin, Ancient West-Arabian, p. 6.
271 Rabin, Ancient West-Arabian, p. 97.
274 Rabin, Ancient West-Arabian, p. 130.
suggest that a linguistic system similar to the PF was their source. It is reported that some Ḥīgāzī dialects employed both allophones of the dative preposition before pronominal suffixes, so lika and laka.\[276\] This is reminiscent of the situation in the PF, which has both λεὑμ [le-hum] and λαὑμ [la-hum]. It is possible that the grammarians would have interpreted the former as Ṽ through the lens of Classical Arabic phonology.

The Ḥīgāzī dialects are reported to have had a more limited case system than their eastern sisters—the dual was supposedly indeclinable, as were certain diptotes such as faʕāli nouns.\[277\] One may carefully suggest that this distribution reflects the influence of the spoken Ḥīgāzī form on the poetic register. In other words, when these data were recorded, Old Ḥīgāzī may have already advanced to the stage of the PF, where case was basically non-existent. Speakers therefore erred in the production of the poetic register, especially in rare forms such as diptotes. The non-declension of the dual is more difficult to explain, and occurs only clearly once in the Quran, so in the famous words of Pharaoh’s magicians, ʔinna hāḏāni la-sāḥirāni “these two are indeed sorcerers.”\[278\] I will return to this construction in the next section.

Another intriguing possibility is the reflex of the ā-vowel reported for certain medial-weak roots, so ūhefa, mēta, ūgeha, ūheba, ūsēra, and so on.\[279\] These seem to be examples of unconditioned raising of ā to ē; since Rabin could not locate a conditioning factor, he attempted to reconstruct the vowel ē for Proto-Semitic. Nothing, however, in the Semitic languages motivates the reconstruction of a four-long vowel, and medial-weak roots are almost certainly reconstructable as strong, with a medial glide, for Proto-Semitic.\[280\] The ē vowel here can therefore be the outcome of two things: it may constitute a different reflex of the collapsed triphthong, so medial ayī collapsing to ē, hayīfa > ūhefa, or it may reflect a situation similar to the PF, where the reflex of *ā is conditioned by environment. In support perhaps of the first solution is the fact that the ē vowel occurs after backed consonants in the tokens collected by the grammarians, which would not be possible in the PF. However, we must remember that the data are not completely trustworthy and are entirely decontextualized—we do not know what the original phonological context of such words was. The safest judgment is to say that the philologists noticed that some medial weak verbs contained ē.

**Colloquial Features in Direct Speech in the QCT?**

The neutralization of the dual in the QCT occurs in the speech of Pharaoh’s magicians after Moses and Aaron bested them in the contest of sorcery (Q 20:63). The fact that the Quran in all other cases inflects the dual correctly may suggest that a certain colloquial register was intended in this context. Another example of this phenomenon may be found in the speech of the women of Pharaoh’s city: upon seeing Joseph for the first time, they declare, in awe of his beauty: mā hādā bašarā (Q 12:31). The use of the accusative in the predicate of a negative

---

276 Rabin, Ancient West-Arabian, p. 159.
277 Rabin, Ancient West-Arabian, pp. 156–57, although note that the absence of case declension in faʕāli nouns is likely original.
278 Other philologists have explained this through the interpretation of the presentative as ʔin, which does not license the accusative case. One wonders if this byform, however, was simply created as an exegetical device and then became a part of the classical language. Ibn Hishām suggested this dialectal solution to the verse quoted above; see Rabin, Ancient West-Arabian, p. 156.
279 Rabin, Ancient West-Arabian, p. 111.
280 Voigt, Die infermen Verbaltypen; Suchard, “Hebrew Hollow Roots.”
nominal sentence was considered by the grammarians a typical Ḥīgāzī feature,\(^{281}\) and it could in fact reflect a progressive form that had not penetrated the literary register. The PF does not possess a functioning accusative, and the first-Islamic-century papyri require more investigation to determine whether such forms are present. Nevertheless, it is possible that the appearance of both oddities in direct speech in the Quran reflects either a subtle distinction between the literary and spoken register or micro-regional variation that communicated some sociolinguistic information no longer accessible.

The connection between the Arabic Grammarians’ Ḥīgāzī and our Old Ḥīgāzī is impossible to prove, but is certainly not contradicted by the evidence. Indeed, it would seem that the grammarians were picking up signals of a language quite similar to what we have reconstructed so far, but, because they never considered a dialect an independent linguistic system, nor did they permit the absence of case and mood inflection, many of its distinctive features were never documented.

### Whence Classical Arabic? A Proposal

The picture of Arabic that I have drawn so far has one glaring omission: Classical Arabic. To anyone reading the QCT or the first-Islamic-century papyri, the difference between its language and the language of Classical Islamic civilization is, in some ways, negligible. Nevertheless, I would stress that calling it Classical Arabic is anachronistic. Before entering into this point, we should come to some understanding of what Classical Arabic is and is not in linguistic terms. What it is not is the reflection of the dialect of a single group of people or of a single geographic area. In its widest sense, Classical Arabic is the sum of features the early Arabic Grammarians described as admissible. The descriptions of the Arabic Grammarians give a number of possible forms for any given morphological feature, and so the linguistic sub-classification of Classical Arabic cannot be carried out without arbitrarily giving weight to one of these forms against the other. For example, it would be incorrect to say that Classical Arabic is a form of Old Ḥīgāzī because it exhibits what I have identified as a Ḥīgāzī isogloss, ḏālika, as that is just one of many possible forms, making the category unsuitable for classification. The same is true of the relative pronoun, and almost all other features of grammar: Classical Arabic is defined by variation.

There is, however, one place in which Classical Arabic does not exhibit variation, and that is with the expression of case in the singular and the use of nunation, features that had long disappeared in Old Ḥīgāzī. I will advance below a tentative scenario as to how Classical Arabic, as we see it, came to be, with the intent that this hypothesis forms the foundation of a more in-depth future research project.

I would suggest that Old Ḥīgāzī as represented in the QCT was the original literary register and prestige spoken dialect of the Medinian state and subsequent Umayyad Empire. A more advanced form of the Quranic dialect is met with in the first-Islamic-century papyri, and it gives rise to early Arabic colloquials, like the one encountered in Greek transcriptions and the PF. Now, in the Umayyad period, another kind of literary form gained prestige—the metered and rhymed ode known as the Qaṣīdah. Its structure and language reflect a literary background distinct from the QCT; the Arab grammarians and philologists were in basic agreement that the language of the poems was closer to the language of the central and eastern

---

\(^{281}\) Rabin, *Ancient West-Arabian*, p. 179.
Arabian Bedouins. In a fascinating and convincing study, P. Webb demonstrates that the salient label of group identity in the pre-Islamic Qaṣīdahs was Maʕadd. While for certain Greek and Syriac writers, Maʕadd could refer to militarized camel-breeding nomads beyond imperial control, the Namārah inscription makes it clear that it refers to a region or people, a fact confirmed by Robin’s comprehensive study of the sources. Between the fourth and sixth centuries, Maʕadd was centered on Maʔsal al-Ǧumḥ, in the Najd, with frontiers on the north and south.

Although this argument is not made explicitly, Webb’s study would further suggest that the ancient odes were composed in the dialect of Maʕadd, or perhaps in the dialects of central Arabia in general. This would imply that Maʕaddite Arabic, unlike the Old Ḥigāzī of the QCT and the northern dialects, did not lose nunation or final short vowels on nouns, giving it a much more archaic nominal system. On the other hand, it may have sometimes collapsed triphthongs invariably to [ā], as evidenced by the fact that, unlike in the QCT, the result of the contracted triphthong *aya (*banaya) may rhyme with the result of the contracted triphthong *awa (*daʕawa).

The Qaṣīdah belongs to a different literary culture than that of the Ḥigāz, as its form is not found in the Quran. And even though the Quran refers to poets, there nothing to suggest that these poets were producing poems belonging to the same style as the pre-Islamic Qaṣīdah. In fact, the precursors to the Qaṣīdah form seem to come from South Arabia. It is likely that this poetic form was introduced to Arabic speakers who came under the influence of South Arabian culture, perhaps in the period when the Himyarites expanded into central Arabia, the territory of Maʕadd. Thus, there is no reason to assume, and no inscriptive evidence to support the idea, that the Qaṣīdah was an ancient poetic form in the Ḥigāz, which after all never fell under Himyarite rule. When Ḥigāzīs took up this poetic style, they, following Rabin’s suggestion, composed in the language of its source —Maʕadd.

282 Rabin, “Beginnings of Classical Arabic,” still contains the most balanced discussion on the various views regarding the nature of Classical Arabic and its relationship to the Quran. The topic of the origins of Classical Arabic is also taken up by Wansbrough, Quranic Studies, §3, and Retsō, The Arabs in Antiquity, §21; I will engage with these views in the excursus at the end of this chapter.

283 Webb, Imagining the Arabs, pp. 75–77; while Muslim genealogists considered Maʕadd the common ancestor of most “northern” Arabs, these constellations do not reflect biological descent but rather the political and social situation of the times in which they were drawn up. Thus the groups considered part of Maʕadd by Muslim genealogists may not have considered themselves as such in pre-Islamic times; see Webb, Imagining the Arabs, §4, on the construction of traditional Arab genealogies.

284 Zwettler, “Maʕadd.”


287 The Hymn of Qāniya, from ancient South Arabia and in the Sabaic language, is a twenty-seven line monorhyme text that may reflect a similar literary style to the Qaṣīdah. It is impossible to determine the existence of a meter in this text on account of the consonantal writing system. See Stein, “‘Himyaritic’ Language,” on the language of the text and further bibliography. It is unclear how old this style is but there is no epigraphic evidence to suggest that it was introduced from the north.

288 None of the pre-Islamic Arabic poetic texts discovered so far belong to the Qaṣīdah model; see Al-Jallad, “Echoes”; Al-Jallad, “Hamāsah” Verses.” The very fact that the Quran had to tell its audience that the speaker was not a “poet” suggests a structural similarity between the text and what the audience would have considered poetry. If the Classical Qaṣīdah was the prototype, no such warning would have been necessary.

289 For a discussion of these texts, see Stein, “Himyaritic” Language and Beeston, Antecedents.

290 Rabin, Ancient West-Arabian, p. 3.
In the Umayyad period, the Qaṣīdah was an important tool for legitimizing authority, especially that of the caliph. Given its status, its language may have begun to replace Old Ḥīgāzī as the prestige dialect for public discourse and performance, although the latter persisted as the administrative language. As such, it would have only been appropriate to read the Quran in the new prestige register, rather than according to the dialect reflected in its orthography. Thus, the reading traditions, the qirāʔāt, emerged from the meeting of the Maʕaddite poetic language and the Old Ḥīgāzī of the QCT.

Webb brings to our attention a fascinating hadith from the Muṣannaf of Abī Shaybah that explicitly connects the presence of final short vowels and nunation (ʔiʕrāb) to Maʕadd:

قتفقوا في السنة
وتعلموا في العربية
وأعربوا القرآن فإنه عري
وتعددوا فإكم معديون

Learn the proper way

Make yourselves knowledgeable in Arabic

Apply final-short vowels (ʔiʕrāb) to the Quran, for it is Arabic

Act as Maʕadd, for you are Maʕaddites

The hadith consists of two parallelisms, with the second drawing an equivalent between being Maʕadd and applying ʔiʕrāb (final short vowels and nunation), a feature clearly foreign to the QCT and Old Ḥīgāzī. What this hadith encapsulates is the changing of prestige registers, with Old Ḥīgāzī giving way to the language of the poems. The qirāʔāt can therefore be conceptualized as models of adapting Old Ḥīgāzī to a new, sociolinguistically prestigious register. This resulted not only in the application of full case inflection on singulars and nunation to nouns, but also to the partial restoration of the glottal stop, and the spread of foreign phonological features (such as the ā-realization of all triphthongs). The degree to which Old Ḥīgāzī was modified varies from qirāʔah to qirāʔah, but all agree in the application of case and nunation.

The Arabic grammatical tradition documented a great deal of variation, but it did not standardize Arabic as such; the poetry itself could only benefit from variation. Thus, it is impossible to claim that the poems belong to a single dialect, as a poet could draw on dialectal forms as the composition required—therefore, we encounter both ǧāka and ǧālika in the ancient odes. Nevertheless, their project had a bias, when it came to nominal inflection, to the register of the Qaṣīdah, the dialect of Maʕadd. In this regard, there could be variation in the expression of case in the singular noun, but it could not be completely omitted. The full-blown case system of Maʕaddī Arabic became a hallmark of High Arabic. Nevertheless, Arabic’s first administrative and literary register was set down in Old Ḥīgāzī and not the poetic dialects, and this language had already been standardized. Thus, standardized “Classical

---

291 Ibn Abī Shaybah, Al-Muṣannaf, 15:433 (30534) apud Webb, Imagining the Arabs, p. 171. While hadith is attributed to ʿOmar, I would argue that its content reflects the linguistic attitudes of later generations.

292 I translate sunnah neutrally as a “way, course, manner” of acting (Lane, 1438b).

oi.uchicago.edu
Arabic” emerged from the process of leveling Old Ḥiğāzī toward invariable aspects of nominal inflection in the Arabic of high literature and public oration—the sociolinguistically salient features of this register. This resulted in the maintenance of most of the morphological forms and syntagms characteristic of the former, but the restoration of case inflection and nunation in the singular, where it had more or less disappeared, and some changes to pronunciation. Other grammatical categories that were on the way out already by the eighth century, such as verbal mood, were reinforced. The result was a day-to-day literary register that was more archaic than its predecessor in certain ways but still Old Ḥiğāzī in most of its grammatical structure. Typical Ḥiğāzī forms like ḍālika and ṭallaḏī had already become part of the scribal language and were therefore the preferred forms in normative Classical Arabic. While other forms were permissible in the poetic register and grammatical tradition, they only rarely entered Classical Arabic prose texts—normative Classical Arabic is Old Ḥiğāzī in Maʿaddite garb.

In a way, this hypothesis follows Vollers’s initial intuition—that the Quran was composed in a dialect other than the one in which it is read today. But the QCT was not “Neo-Arabic,” rather its language reflects a separate stream of Old Arabic, which was essentially the ancestral literary register of the first-Islamic-century materials.

Old Ḥiğāzī’s enduring legacy is Arabic orthography. Since Old Ḥiğāzī was the basis of Arabic’s first true writing tradition, its phonology was transformed into the orthography of Classical Arabic, which for the most part persists to the present day.293

Table 24. The legacy of Old Ḥiğāzī in Arabic orthography

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Orthography</th>
<th>Old Ḥiğāzī</th>
<th>Maʿaddite = poetic</th>
<th>Standard Classical Arabic</th>
<th>PF/first-Islamic-century transcriptions</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>انقلب</td>
<td>*ʔanqalab</td>
<td>inqalaba</td>
<td>inqalaba</td>
<td>ανκαλεβου /ʔanqalebû/</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>جدا</td>
<td>*gaddā</td>
<td>ǧiddan</td>
<td>ǧiddan</td>
<td>γεδδα /ġeddâ/</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>مول</td>
<td>*mawlē</td>
<td>mawlā</td>
<td>mawlā</td>
<td>ماعلє /mawlê/</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ماهية</td>
<td>*māyidah</td>
<td>māʔidatun</td>
<td>māʔidatun</td>
<td>μαιδευ /mây(i)deh/</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

We may end with the matter of the relationship between Maʿaddite Arabic, which gave rise to the poetry, and Old Ḥiğāzī. There is no question that Ḥiğāzī isoglosses, like ṭallaḏī, are common in the ancient poems. If such forms were native, then it could suggest that the Maʿaddite dialect was introduced to central Arabia from the Ḥiğāz in prehistoric times, before the loss of nunation and nominal morphology, but after the emergence of the isoglosses characteristic of Old Ḥiğāzī. As such, both Old Ḥiğāzī and the dialect of Maʿadd would share a more recent common ancestor than other varieties of Arabic, a variety we may call Proto-Ḥiğāzī Arabic.

One should, however, keep in mind that this classification is extremely hypothetical. The evidence for Maʿaddite sharing a common ancestor with Old Ḥiğāzī is based exclusively on poetry, where interdialectal mixing is common. It is very possible that Ḥiğāzī isoglosses entered this register on account of their suitability for poetic composition and stylistic factors. As such, their presence in the ancient odes, alongside other, non-Ḥiğāzī features, need not

293 Modifications to the Old Ḥiğāzī skeleton to represent later forms of Arabic include diacritics to distinguish polyphonic consonants, the representation nunation by writing the vowel diacritic twice, and the hamza, a small supralinear ʕayn, to represent the glottal stop.
reflect the vernacular of Maʕadd. The languages of the early poems remains to be studied on its own terms, a prerequisite for answering these questions in a more definitive manner.

Excursus: ʕarabī mubīn

The Quran refers to its language, lisān, as ʕarabī, and many scholars have taken this as evidence that the text was produced in a linguistic variety distinct from the colloquial of the Ḥigāz. The discussion has a large bibliography, but in this short excursus, I wish to focus on two new ideas in order to advance the hypothesis that ʕarabī meant simply the local vernacular language as opposed to traditional monotheistic liturgical idioms. Retsö claims that the adjective ʕarabī was meant to be a proof of the divine nature of its message and therefore could not refer to the vernacular, but he provides no clear argumentation in support of such a conclusion.294 Webb argues along similar lines, concluding that the Quran’s ʕarabī refers to a magico-sacral language, but his reconstruction of a ritualistic “clarion koiné” used by desert soothsayers is based on no evidence that can withstand scrutiny.295

Both Retsö and Webb have taken comparisons to pre-Islamic soothsayers and poets (kuh-hān and šuʕarāʔ) as having to do with the artificial nature of the Quran’s language, a quality referred to by ʕarabī; there is nothing in these references that requires such an interpretation. For example, consider the following:

69:41: wa-mā huwa bi-qawli šāʕirin qalīlan mā tuʔminūn

“and it is not the speech of a poet; how little faith you have!”

69:42: wa-lā bi-qawli kāhinin qalīlan mā taḏakkarūn

“nor is it the speech of a soothsayer; how little you remember!”

52:29: fa-ḏakkir fa-mā ʔanta bi-niʕmati rabbika bi-kāhinin wa-lā maǧnūn

“and so remind (them) that you are not, by the grace of your lord, a soothsayer or possessed”

None of these references, however, lay the cause of this similarity on the use of a shared artificial language, the lisān ʕarabī, as it were. Moreover, this expression is never applied to the soothsayers or poets. It is more likely that the similarities between the Quran and other ritualistic forms of speech stem from its content, that is, divine communications, and its stylistics, that is, its rhymed and rhythmic language. These features were very likely a component of the artistic language of soothsayers and poets, and it would have sufficed to draw a comparison. We are therefore not required to posit a sacred koiné with a separate grammar.

While Webb contends that ʕarabī is not the name of the language but rather an adjective meaning “clear,” it is indisputable that the Quran was produced in a local Arabian language rather than the liturgical registers used in the north and south. This fact is remarkable and may also have caused some to compare the Prophet with the soothsayers and poets, who

295 Webb, Imagining the Arabs, pp. 115–16, 124.
would have also composed their communications in a local idiom, rather than in foreign, unintelligible languages, like Hebrew, Greek, or Gaḥāz.

Based on this suggestion, I would argue that the ūrabī of the Quran signifies precisely the opposite of what Retsō and Webb have imagined; it is not a remote, divine register used by a special cast of holy men. On the contrary, following Hoyland, the Quran was a monotheistic message in the vernacular.296 Indeed, the use of special ritualistic registers would have characterized monotheistic liturgies in this period, and so the Quran broke with this tradition by delivering its message in the language of ordinary people, a language called ūrabī “Arabic.” This explanation is further corroborated by Q14:4 “and we have never sent a messenger except in the language of his people.” I will apply this sense to the eleven verses in which the term occurs:

Ṣarabī in the Quran

12:2: ʔinna ʔanzalnā-hu qurʔānan ūrabīyyan ʔaʃallakum taʃqilūn

“indeed, we have sent it down as a recitation in Arabic (lit. an Arabic recitation) that you might understand [it]”

Here, the Quran is stating clearly that its language is meant to be understood by the audience. This fits well the interpretation that the current scripture is distinguished from its predecessors by the fact that it is in an intelligible vernacular and does not require the intercession of a holy man to decipher its meaning.

13:37: wa-κaḏālika ʔanzalnā-hu ḥukman ūrabīyyan

“and thus we have sent it down as wisdom in Arabic (Arabic wisdom)”

The same interpretation for 12:2 applies here; the ūrabī quality of the wisdom was to ensure that the messenger to whom it was sent could understand it and heed it. The rest of the verse suggests as much as it states that he alone is responsible for not heeding knowledge after it had come to him, suggesting that blame cannot be put on another responsible for translating it.

16:103: wa-laqad naʕlamu ʔannahum yaqūlūna ʔinnamā yuʕallimu-hū baʃarun lisānu lladī yulḥidūna ʔilayhi ʔaʃgamiyyun wa-hāɗa lisānun ūrabīyyun mubīn

“and we indeed know that they say it is merely a man who teaches him; the language of him to whom they refer is foreign but this is Arabic, explicating”

This statement is a response to those who claim that Muhammad is being taught by a human being, who apparently was foreign, a non-Arabic speaker. The Quran states that the language (lisān) of that to which they refer is ʔaʃgami, “foreign” or “unintelligible.” It is also possible that the relative pronoun ʔallaɗi refers to the the content of what was allegedly taught, either a text or oral document in a foreign liturgical language. Thus, the Quran denies its source in such, as its language is intelligible.

296 Hoyland, “The Language of the Qur’an.”
20:113: wa-kaḏālika ʔanzalnā-hu qurʔānan ʕarabiyyan wa-ṣarrafnā fī-hi mina l-waʕīdi laʔallahum yattaqūna ʔaw yuhaddītu laḥum ḏikrā

“and thus we have sent it down as recitation in Arabic and have made clear within it matters of warning that perhaps they would believe or that it would cause them to remember (their lord)”

Here the ʕarabī quality of the Quran ensures that people would believe or be reminded. The warnings, no doubt referring to punishment for sinful behavior, are in a readily intelligible language and are meant to facilitate this.

26:195: bi-lisānin ʕarabiyyin mubīn

“in an Arabic language, explicating”

In the preceding verses, the Prophet had received revelation from the trustworthy spirit (ar-rūḥu l-ʔamīn) so that he would become one of the warners (li-takūna mina l-munḏirīn 26:194), “in an Arabic language, explicating.” The Prophet’s public, however, considers the linguistic vehicle of his communication remarkable and a cause of doubt as to his authenticity. To this skepticism, the Quran replies, wa-law nazzalnā-hu ʕalā baʕḍi l-ʔaʕǧamiyyīn “and if we had sent it down to some ʔaʕǧamite (foreign-language speakers)” (26:198), wa-qaraʔa-hū ʕalayhim mā kānū bi-hī muʔminīn “and he recited it to them, they still would not have believed” (26:199).

I would argue that the Quran acknowledges here that scripture has previously been in foreign, liturgical languages, and it remarks that even if it had been sent down in such a way, its audience still would not have been satisfied. Thus, the Arabic-ness of the text is not proof of its divine nature: on the contrary, it is that very quality that makes the text seem profane.

39:28: qurʔānan ʕarabiyyan ġayra ḏī ʔiwaǧin laʔallahum yattaqūn

“it is a recitation in Arabic (lit. an Arabic recitation), without any fault, that they might believe”

The verse before this states that the people have been given every sort of example in this lesson so that they might remember or be mindful of their lord; the present verse then makes it even clearer why the people should have comprehended the message—the language of the text is in Arabic, without any faults. I would interpret “crookedness” here in the context of a foreign proselytizer attempting to communicate scripture to Arabic speakers in an accented or less-than-fluent Arabic. This message is fluent, as the Prophet was a native Arabic speaker, from among the people to whom he preaches, so there should be nothing to prevent the audience from comprehending the message and heeding it.

41:3: kitābun fuṣṣilat ʔāyātu-hū qurʔānan ʕarabiyyan li-qawmin yaʕlamūn

“A book the verses of which have been explained in a recitation in Arabic (lit. Arabic recitation) for people to understand”

In the same way, ʕarabī denotes the message in its intelligible form. Perhaps here kitāb may be understood to refer to some foreign scripture, the Hebrew Bible, or the Greek New Testament.
42:7: wa-kaḏālika ʔawḥaynā ʔilayka qurʔānan ūsarabiyyan li-tunḏira ʔumma l-qurā wa-man ḥawla-hā

“And thus we have revealed to you a recitation in Arabic for you to warn ūmm al-Qurā and those surrounding it”

The purpose of the ūsarabi of the Quran is clearly local—to warn those of Umm al-Qurā (which traditional exegetes take as Mecca) and its surroundings. The most natural reading is that Arabic is the language of this area, and that his warning would therefore be intelligible.

43:3: ʔinnā ǧaʕalnā-hu qurʔānan ʕarabiyyan laʕallakum taʕqilūn

“We have indeed made it a recitation in Arabic that you might comprehend [it]”

See the explanation of 12:2.

46:12: wa-hāḏa kitābun muṣaddaqun lisānan ūsarabiyyan li-yunḏira ʔādina ẓalamū wa-bušrā lil-muḥsinīn

“And this is a book confirming (what was before) in Arabic, in order to warn those who act wrongfully and to be glad tidings for those who do good”

The ūsarabi is connected to the act of warning, which again implies intelligibility among ordinary people.

41:44: wa-law ǧaʕalnā-hu qurʔānan ʔaʕǧamiyyan la-qālū lawlā fuṣṣilat ʔāyātuhu ʔaʕǧamiyyun wa-ʕarabiyyun

“And if we had made it a recitation in a foreign language they would have said, if only its verse were explained, foreign (language) and then Arabic”

I would suggest that this verse contains some information about how Judaeo-Christian liturgy was delivered in the pre-Islamic Ḥīgāz. Again, the audience protests the authenticity of the Quran because it is in the vernacular, Arabic, and not a foreign liturgical language. Yet, if the Quran were revealed in a foreign language, the audience would complain that the foreign verses should be explained in Arabic anyway. The expression law-lā fuṣṣilat ʔāyātuhu ʔaʕǧamiyyun wa-ʕarabiyyun may indicate the way this was normally done. The speaker would give the verse in its original, such as Greek, Aramaic, or Hebrew, and then its explication in Arabic, thus “foreign (language) and then Arabic.”

I hope to have shown that nothing in these eleven verses requires us to ascribe a magico-sacred meaning to the adjective ūsarabi. The opposite case seems to be more compelling: the Quran is in an ordinary language that everyone can understand. Webb brings up one more issue that motivates him to reinterpret the meaning of ūsarabi in the Quran, the meaning “clear, clarion” in the Classical Arabic dictionaries.297 For him, this meaning is not reconcilable with other words derived from this root, especially the nomadic meanings. In fact, I would argue that the “clear” family of meanings naturally derives from the name of the language, ūsarabi. This type of semantic development is common in the world’s languages; to give a Germanic example, consider the word in German for the name of the language, Deutsch, and the related

297 Webb, Imagining the Arabs, p. 124.
adjective for “clear,” “plain,” *deutlich*. The latter clearly derives from the former, and both are derived from the self-designation of its speakers, ultimately from the Proto-Germanic word *þiudiskaz* “of the people.”

I am convinced by Webb’s arguments of a largely Islamic-era construction of received pre-Islamic Arab identity, but this in no way implies that the term *ʕarab* was not used for the name of a language or even a group of people in the few centuries preceding the rise of Islam—it naturally would have had a different connotation. As I have argued, the simplest explanation is to take *ʕarabī* as the name of the Quran’s language, but this does not require that its community self-identified as *ʕarab*, nor does it imply a connection with the *ʔaʕrāb*, the “outsiders antagonists” of the Quran. A perfect parallel is found in the pre-modern Arab world. A resident of Cairo or Damascus before the rise of Arab nationalism would not have referred to themselves as *ʕarabī*, reserving the term for nomads, but they would have certainly called the colloquial language they were speaking *ʕarabī*. The name of a language can obviously be different from the name of the people who speak it. How the name of this language came to be *ʕarabī* and its connection with Nabataea and Provincia Arabia will be taken up in a future paper.

---

298 Consider the speakers of French, English, and even Arabic today!
Chapter 5

Edition of the Arabic Columns of the Damascus Psalm Fragment

This edition is based on the reconstruction of the Arabic text by R. Vollandt (see appendix 1) in light of the facts discerned about the language of the document as discussed in chapter 2. Restorations are given in parantheses.

v.20

ṣaḥr(ā)ḥ fa-sēlet mayyah wel-ʔewdiyeh fāḍat leʕal wa-ḥubz yeqdir yuʕtī
ʔeu yuḥeyyi māy(i)deh li-ṣiʕb-hu(hi) [sic] [*li-ṣiʕbi-h(?)]

[Forasmuch as he smote] the rock, and water flowed, and the valleys emptied; perhaps he will be able also to give bread or prepare a table for his people?

Notes

1) The other comparable manuscripts have in Arabic الامياه [al-ʔamyāh] and امياه [ʔamyāh], and while there may be space at the beginning of the word for a few letters, the Alpha following the Mu suggests a different pronunciation, akin to Levantine Arabic mayya and possibly Safaitic myt [mayyat].

2) Corriente remarks that the syntax of this line calques the Greek.299

3) The facsimile of Violet gives an extra Chi here, while it is not apparent on the photograph.

299 Corriente, “Psalter Fragment,” p. 304.
Therefore the Lord heard, and he was provoked. Fire was kindled in Jacob, and wrath went up against Israel.

Notes

1) Corriente identifies ruḡz as a loanword from Aramaic rugzā. The other manuscripts have this form with the article.

Because they had no faith in God, and did not trust in his deliverance.
Notes

1) Violet renders this line as wa lā tawakkalā,\(^{501}\) Kahle as wa lā ittakalā,\(^{302}\) Blau follows Violet.\(^{303}\) The other manuscripts, however, give two variants: la ṭaḵkla (Sinai Ms. Gr. 34 and 36) and la ṭakal (Sinai, Ms. Gr. 35). The surviving letters can only reflect the former: the six lacunae are best restored as -αταουα-.\(^{301}\) Violet, “Psalmfragment,” p. 390.\(^{302}\) Kahle, Die Arabischen Bibelübersetzungen, p. 32.\(^{303}\) Blau, Handbook, p. 71.

2) Kahle and Blau read χαλασυ (v.22), but on the tracing of Violet, the final Iota is barely visible, represented only by a small dot.\(^{304}\) The photographs show that this small dot is nothing but a word divider, and therefore the reading must be amended to χαλασυ.

v.23

οα αμαρ ελσιχεβ

μιν•φαυκ

οα αβοαβ ελοε\(^{1}\)

σαμα•φατεχ•

wa ŋamar el-siḥeb min fawq wa ŋabwāb el-se...samā fateḥ

And he commanded the clouds from above, and opened the doors of heaven.

Notes

1) The scribe runs out of space to complete the word [semā] and so begins writing it anew on the following line. Curiously, he uses the [a] allophone of *a in his second attempt.

v.24

οα•αμ•ταρ•λεύμ•

μ(ανν)α•λια

(κυλο)υ•\(^{1}\)

(οα)(χουβ)ζ•μιν•ελ

(σεμα)αγ•τά畬

wa ŋamṯar lehum m(ann)α liyā(kul)ū (wa) (ḫub)z min el-(semā) ?aṯā-hum

\(^{501}\) Violet, “Psalmfragment,” p. 390.

\(^{302}\) Kahle, Die Arabischen Bibelübersetzungen, p. 32.


\(^{304}\) Kahle, Die Arabischen Bibelübersetzungen; Blau, Handbook.
And he rained Manna upon them to eat, and gave them the bread from heaven.

Notes

1) The lacunae permit the restoration of four letters, which implies that short [u] was written here with Ypsilon. The letter after the Iota is heavily damaged in the photograph, and it could plausibly be an Alpha or a Lambda. If one restores it as λιλ, then it would suggest a reading similar to Sinai, Mss. Gr. 35 and 36. However, in Violet’s copy, but not in the surviving photograph, the word terminates in an Ypsilon, favoring as in Sinai, Ms. Gr. 34, but with a true subjunctive form lacking the nūn.

2) The lacunae permit the restoration of six letters, four for the word “bread” and two for the conjunction οα /wa/, rendering Greek και ἄρτον.

v.25

(χουβ)ζ ελμελεικε
(ακ)ελινσέν
(χα)βαγ
λαυμελετε-
μέλευ-
(ʔak)el ʔinsēn (ʔa)baʕ(i) baʕaṯ la-hum ley(i)temellew
Man ate angels’ bread; he sent them provisions that they may be filled.

Notes

1) The scribe forgot to write the Mu then added a superscript με. The diphthong is spelled without the elongated Iota, and the feminine ending lacks the Hypsilon. It would appear that the scribe was careless in the writing of this word, transcribing it according to normal Greek orthography and leaving out the conventional use of elongated Iota and Hypsilon to represent consonantal [y] and [h], respectively.

2) The indefinite form here disagrees with all other manuscripts, which have الإنسان; cf. mayyah (v. 20).

3) Corriente takes šabaʕ as an adverbial complement of the verb ʔakal, rendering “the men ate the angels’ bread until being satiated.” In fact, šabaʕ begins a new clause and is the object of baʕaṯ “he sent,” the entire clause being: šabaʕ baʕaṯ la-hum lay(i)temellew “he sent to them provisions in order that they be sated.” This renders accurately the Greek: ἐπισιτισμὸν ἀπεστείλεν αὐτοῖς εἰς πλισμονήν.

305 Corriente, “Psalter Fragment,” p. 309.
4) On the spelling and rendering of this word, see Chapter 2, “The Verb.”

v. 26

α·ύάγ·ελ·τεμ(αν)¹
μιν·ελ·σεμα
οα·ατε·βη κου
ετύ·ελ·γα
σιφ²
ʔahāǧ el-teym(an) min el-semā wa ʔatē bi-quwwet-uh el-ʕāṣif

He removed the south wind from heaven; and by his might he brought in the south-west wind.

Notes

1) The name of the south wind in Classical Arabic is al-ǧanūb. The use of Teym[an] here might be an Aramaicism, tayman “south.” An identical term is used in the Hebrew Bible, tēmān.

2) This term for the southwest wind is unknown in Classical Arabic. The term ʕāṣif is applied to rīḥ to denote a wind that blows violently (Lane, 2064b). The term is attested in the Quran (Q 10:22).

v. 27

οα·αμ·ταρ·γαλεј
ωμ·μίθλ·ελτυ
ράβ·λυχουμ
οαμίθλ·ραμλ
ελ βου·χου·τη
ουρ·μυνγνεχαδ

wa ʔamṭar ʕaley-hum miṯl el-turāb luḥūm wa miṯl raml el-buḥūr tiyūr muqneḥah

And he rained upon them flesh like dust, and like the sand of the seas winged birds.
v.28

φα•οα•καγ•ατ
φη•οασατ•γας
κερ•𝚨 μχαυλ
χη•تضمن•ῡμ
fa-waqaʕat fī wasaṭ ʕasker-hum ġawl ʰiyēm-hum
And they fell into the midst of their camp, surrounding their tents.

v.29

φα•ακελου•οα•
χεβιγου•γεδ
δα•
oa•χε•وحدة•ῡμ
γεβ•λαў•ι'
fa-ʔakelūwa šebiʕū ǧeddā wa šehwat-hum ǧēb la-hum
So they ate, and were greatly filled; and he brought to them their desire.

Notes

1) The verb ġēb “bring” is typical of the modern dialects of Arabic, derived from ǧāʔa bi- “to come with.” The verb translates Greek ἤνεγκεν “he brought.” This phrasing agrees with Sinai, Ms. Gr. 35, against ʔatā-hum bi-šahwat-hum in 34 and 36, and more closely matches the syntax of the Greek.

v.30

(λα)μ ιουγ•δεμον•
(χ)ευοετўμ•
oa•γινδ•μα•κεν
ελ•ταγαμ•φη
φα•υ•ῡμ^2
(la)m yuʿdemū (š)ehwet-hum wa ūindmā kēn el-ṭaʕām fī fāh-hum
They were not denied their desire; but when their food was in their mouth

Notes
1) Blau transcribes this word incorrectly as φαὑμ. The plural الطاب is used in 34 and 36.

v.31
(o)a ruγζ ʔallāh
then the wrath of God [rose up against them, and slew the fattest of them, and overthrew the choice men of Israel].

v.51
τεγ•βι
μεσε²
tefb
mese
[and smote every first-born in the land of Egypt; the first-fruits of their] labors [in the] tents [of Cham].

Notes
1) Ms.Gr. 34 and 36 have نبهم suggesting tefb-hum.
2) This fragment most likely reflects مسکهυ/mesekɛn/, the plural of مسکهυ /mesken/ attested in verse 55, which is found in Ms.Gr. 34 and 35.

v.52
οα•ασκ•
γανεμ
οα•ασ•γι
μιθλ

And he drove [his people like] sheep; he led [them] as [a flock] in the wild(erness).

**Notes**

1) Violet restores this word as the causative أصعد a suitable rendition of Greek ἀνήγαγεν “he led up,” and this is found in Ms.Gr. 34 and 36.

2) Violet restores this as في البرية في البرية.

**v.53**

And he guided [them with] hope, [and] they [did not] feel fear; [and the] sea covered [their enemies].
Notes

1) Violet renders this هداهم in Arabic, and this is found in Ms.Gr. 34 and 36, but the PF clearly attests an Alpha before the verb. This would seem to be a mixed form, with a causative prefix α and then the G-stem had(ā). If this were a true causative, it would have been spelled qīḍā /ʔahdā/. Less likely is the possibility that this reflects the gahawa-syndrome, that is, the insertion of an [a] after a guttural.

2) On this word, see the discussion in Chapter 2, “Nominal Morphology: The Definite Article.”

All other manuscripts differ from the PF in having على الرجا.

v. 54

οα•αδ•χ(αλύμ)

jλέ•γεβ(ελ)¹

κάδ•σό (ελ)²

γέβελ•ά(δα)

ελεδι•α(χα)

dετ•εμ(ινυ)

wa ᵙadḥ(al-hum)

ʔilē ḡeb(el)

qads-oh (el)

ḡebel ḫā(ḏā)----

ʔelleḏi

ʔa(ḥa)det yemīn-uh³

And he brought (them) in to the mountain of his sanctuary, this mountain which his right hand had purchased.

Notes

1) The PF literally renders the Greek; the other manuscripts do not use a preposition وادخلهم, وادخلهم طور هداهم (Ms.Gr. 34, 36) and وادخلهم طور هداهم (Ms.Gr. 35).

2) On the rendition of κάδσό, see the discussion on pages 10 and 42.

3) Violet restored this verb as ḡαزت but Vollandt (appendix 1) restores استفادت (Ms.Gr. 34 and 35) from a majority reading. There does not seem to be enough space to restore the latter, however.
And he cast out the nations (from before them, and) caused (them) to inherit by a line of inheritance, (and) made the tribes of Israel to dwell in (their) tents.

1) Vollandt (appendix 1) restores جوههم instead of Violet’s وجههم. This would be the first use of Omicron-Epsilon to spell ū.

2) The restoration of the elongated Iota is conjectural based on the spelling of ābāy(i)hum as ἀβαʝὑμ.

3) Violet restores this verse as واسكن في مساكنهم قبائل اسرائيل. The vocalization of μεσε(κεν) has been discussed above (v. 51, n2) This use of Iota in the spelling of the final syllable of Israel here rather than Eta as earlier reflects Iotacism.
v.56

οα•αβ•τε•λεύ•οα
μαρ•μαρον•
ελ•ι•λέυ•ελγαλη
οα•χε•ύα•δ(α)τυ
λαμ•εχ•φα•δον•

wa ʔabtelew wa marmarū el-ʔilēh el-ʕālī wa šehād(ā)t-uh lam yeḥfaḍū

Yet they tempted and provoked the highest God, and kept not his testimonies.

1) Corriente (2007) reads this word as “šahādtu,” a singular, against the plural Greek μαρτύρια, which it translates. 307 It is possible that the scribe omitted the Alpha by mistake, as there are no examples of the syncope of *a in this dialect. In Violet’s facsimile, there is a lacuna between the Delta and Tau, where the remnants of an Alpha can be restored. The photograph is unclear in this area. All other manuscripts have شهاداته.

v.57

φα•ανκα•λε•β(ο)υ
οα•γα•δα•ρου•
μιθλ•α•βα•
j•ψμ
αν•κα•λε•βου
μιθλ•ελ•καυ•ς•ελ
γαυγέ

fa ʔanqalebū wa ġadarū miṯl ābāy(i)-hum ʔanqalebū miṯl el-qaws el-ʕawğē

And they turned back and acted treacherously, like their fathers, they turned back, like a crooked bow.

Notes

1) All other manuscripts have ورجعوا.

307 Corriente, “Psalter Fragment.”
And they provoked him with their high places, and moved him to jealousy with their graven images.

**Notes**

1) The author chose to translate βουνοίς αυτῶν “their hills/high places” with Arabic ʔawṯān, the plural of waṯan, an “idol,” and may have been confused by the following word, γλυπτοίς. Only Ms.Gr. 36 has ʔafṣel.

God heard and lightly regarded them, and greatly despised Israel.

**Notes**

1) On the rendering of the verb αφσέλ, see n106.

-λ-

semiʕ allāh wa tegāfel (wa) ʔafṣel ged(dā)—li-isra(īl)

God heard and lightly regarded them, and greatly despised Israel.
and he rejected the tabernacle of Shiloh, his tent where he dwelt among men.

Notes

1) The C-stem (form IV) matches Ms.Gr. 35, 36.

v.61

And he gave their strength into captivity.
Appendix 1

Beyond Arabic in Greek Letters:
The Scribal and Translational Context
of the Violet Fragment

Ronny Vollandt, Ludwig-Maximilians-Universität, Munich

The Violet fragment is a bilingual Greek-Arabic fragment of Psalm 78:20–31, 51–61 (LXX 77). First published by Violet in 1901, it was found at the end of the nineteenth century in the Qubbat al-Khazna at the Umayyad Mosque in Damascus. All attempts to understand it have hitherto concentrated, almost exclusively, on an analysis of the phonetic transcription system from Arabic to Greek and the linguistic features it reflects. In this short contribution, I shall suggest two further, complementary, lines of investigation: the fragment’s material aspects as part of a formerly complete codex, and the translation tradition it represents, considered in the wider context of Arabic versions of biblical scriptures.308 Bruno Violet, the only scholar so far to have studied the original fragment, noted the importance of such a study. He, albeit very briefly, described its measurements, the Greek script, and the arrangement of columns and lines, and he considered that the parchment was of poor quality, having a rough surface with a visible grain.309 He also made conjectures about the placement of the bifolium within the quire.310 Violet, furthermore, added an observation about the Arabic version exhibited in the fragment, discerning a certain resemblance to the translation of Abū al-Fatḥ ʿAbdallāh ibn al-Faḍl, deacon of Antioch in the eleventh century, who produced an Arabic version of

308 Graf, Die christlich-arabische Literatur bis zur fränkischen Zeit, pp. 8–9, places the fragment within the Palestinian group of texts. Later, in his Geschichte der christlichen arabischen Literatur (GCAL, p. 114), he suggested more specifically that its place of origin was Syria, but he does treat the Violet Fragment separate from the manuscripts at St. Catherine’s Monastery. Having only had very limited access to manuscript collections in Sinai except through catalogues and edited manuscripts, Graf relied on the descriptions in Gardthausen, Catalogus codicum graecorum sinaiticorum. The catalogue entries did not allow a textual comparison. Blau, A Grammar of Christian Arabic, Based Mainly on South-Palestinian Texts from the First Millennium, 1:31, sees the Violet Fragment as clearly distinct from the corpus of manuscripts from St. Catherine’s Monastery, although he does not specify the reason for this assumption. Mavroudi, “Arabic Words in Greek Letters: The Violet Fragment and More,” and Harlfinger, “Beispiele der Maiuscula Ogivalis Inclinita vom Sinai und aus Damaskus,” however, were the first to point out clear scribal affinities between the Violet Fragment and some complete Greek manuscripts from Sinai, among these a number of bilingual copies of the book of Psalms; compare my Arabic Versions of the Pentateuch, p. 57, where I indicate that these manuscripts contain the same translation. For more on this issue, see Treiger, “From Theodore Abū Qurra to Abed Azrié: The Arabic Bible in Context,” p. 20: “Excursus B1,” where Treiger connects the known copies with a number of further manuscripts.

309 Violet, “Ein zweisprachiges Psalmfragment aus Damascus,” col. 386, where he calls it of poor quality (“ärmlich”).

the book of Psalms that became widely used in the Melkite Church. As I will argue, both interrelated lines of investigation—considering the material aspects and the translation tradition—can help us in reconstructing the lost context of the fragment.

Provenance

The Violet Fragment, a single bifolium, was found by Bruno Violet at the Umayyad Mosque in Damascus in 1900, where it was located in what he referred to as the mosque’s genizah. The current whereabouts of the bifolium are unknown (and I am consequently basing this work on the surviving photographs).

Violet retrieved the fragment from the Qubbat al-Khazna—the “Treasury Dome”—an octagonal structure decorated with mosaics, on eight Roman columns, which is located in the mosque’s courtyard. There, in a medium-sized chamber with a diameter of approximately 6.5 m, protected from harm by a heavily locked iron door, and only reachable with the help of a ladder, a pile of manuscripts—as high as one man standing upright—had found its final rest. Most of what the chamber held was old Qurans and literary texts, but there were also Hajj certificates and documents pertaining to everyday life, such as marriage and divorce contracts and deeds. The fragment had been left there, together with other “worn-out” documents, following the received practice of storing in a consigned place any sacred books and documents that were too fragile to remain in circulation or had fallen out of use. This “storing away” was not intended to allow later retrieval or to be a type of archiving, but was rather a ritualized burial resulting from an esteem for, a special care for, or a fear of desecration of the written word. The practice was shared by Muslims, Jews, and Christians. Not many years before Violet was in Damascus, Schechter had unearthed the great treasures of the Cairo Genizah, so Violet deemed it appropriate to use the term genizah for the Qubba in the Umayyad Mosque.

The importance of this Damascus Genizah is twofold: the documents and manuscript fragments originated in Syria, likely in Damascus itself, while most other similar corpora (such as those from the Cairo Genizah or the papyri) hail from Egypt and thus reflect in content and materiality particular Egyptian customs. More importantly, the documents are part of a defined corpus with a clear provenance, whereas the vast majority of finds lack this context.

---

311 Violet, “Ein zweisprachiges Psalmfragment,” cols. 386 and 427–28. He identified the similarity to ibn al-Fadl’s version through an Arabic psalter containing this version, which was printed in 1899 by the Imprimerie Catholique in Beirut. Violet described the two texts, the Arabic column of the fragment and ibn al-Fadl’s version, as being closely related, even if not always identical: “sehr nah verwandt, wenn nicht mit jener Ausgabe identisch” (col. 428). He is followed in this by Graf, in both Die christlich-arabische Literatur and in GCAL, 1:114, as well as by Rahlfs, Septuaginta-Studien, 2:35.

312 Violet, “Ein zweisprachiges Psalmfragment,” col. 384: “Damascener Moschee-Genisah.” This characterization is followed by modern scholars.

313 Compare Sadan, “Storage and Treatment of Used Sacred Books (Genizah) in the Muslim Tradition and Jewish Parallels”; Sadan, “Genizah and Genizah-like Practices in Islamic and Jewish Traditions”; Sadan, “Ritual Purity, Impurity and the Disposal of Books in Islam and Judaism”; and also Cohen, “Geniza for Islamicists, Islamic Geniza, and the ‘New Cairo Geniza’.” Christian genizahs have been much less studied than Islamic and Jewish genizahs. However, the “New Finds” at St. Catherine’s Monastery—in contrast to the “Old Finds” that were gathered by Kyr Isaia in 1734 in the library building (where they served as a functioning and living library)—were stored in a chamber of the Tower of St. George and in some niches of the church and its crypt, and this can be considered to be a genizah to some extent; cf. Nicolopoulos, Holy Monastery and Archdiocese of Sinai: The New Finds of Sinai. Similarly, the vestiges of the White Monastery Library, the largest repository of Sahidic manuscripts (none of them fully preserved), has sometimes been thought to derive from a genizah inside the monastery; cf. Hyvernat, “Pourquoi les anciennes collections de manuscrits coptes sont si pauvres,” pp. 422–28.
The existence of the Damascus Genizah had always been known to the local population, who venerated the place and adorned it with many myths. Notice of the manuscript treasures in the Qubba had also reached Hermann von Soden (1852–1914). He had been working on a new edition of the Greek New Testament in Berlin and, endowed by a patron with the right means, he set out to gather new sources for textual criticism. Consulting various collections en route, von Soden travelled from Egypt, through Palestine, to Syria. In Damascus it came to his ears that the British consul, Edward Thomas Rogers (1831–84), had caused a scandal about 35 years earlier, when he came into possession of fragments from the Qubba. Among these was, not least, a fragment of the Greek New Testament. What is more, it was not that long since Constantin von Tischendorf, another well-travelled textual critic, had brought the Codex Sinaiticus from St. Catherine’s Monastery; and the papyri of Oxyrhynchus had been discovered only a few years earlier. With feverish excitement, von Soden now imagined discoveries in the Qubba that could rival these finds.

On his initiative, the German emperor and Prussian king Wilhelm II urged the Sublime Porte by diplomatic means to allow a scholar to go through the material and study it thoroughly. Wilhelm II had only just returned from a historic visit to the Holy Land and Syria, where he and his consort Augusta Victoria were shown the Umayyad Mosque and also, one may conjecture, the Qubba. This visit had strengthened the alliance between Prussia and the Ottoman Empire. Permission for a study was granted by Abdul Hamid II in the form of an irāda. The irāda also instructed Wali Nazim Pasha, governor of Damascus, to carry out and oversee the opening of the Qubba. Funding for the expedition was secured, and a young scholar, Bruno Violet, was chosen to undertake it. He arrived in Damascus on May 30, 1900, and commenced with his task. A condition of his work, as stipulated by the mosque’s authorities, was simple: he was only allowed to consult non-Muslim fragments. He recounts that Muslim fragments—mostly Quranic fragments, Hajj certificates, and legal documents—were immediately taken away from him and stored in sacks. The remaining, non-Muslim, fragments were cleaned, flattened, and conserved by the modest means available to Violet. After about a year, his work

---

314 The historian ibn Asbāt relates an incident in the year 911 AH (1505/6 CE), in which Sībāj al-Ashrafi, the Ottoman governor to Damascus, removed books from the Qubba, against the protests of the local population; see Bandt and Rattmann, “Die Damaskusreise Bruno Violets,” p. 4. The Qubba was still considered a local attraction in the nineteenth century. Old postcards describe it as “un chambre des livres sacrés”; see the image in Liebrenz, Die Rifāʿīya aus Damaskus, p. 186. A similar postcard of the Qubba, with the words “ancienne bibliothèque,” can be found in Déroche, “In the Beginning: Early Qur’ans from Damascus,” p. 62. As mentioned in Liebrenz, Die Rifāʿīya, p. 188n221, in the 1860s Albert Socin described the Qubba as “a hoard of old books and treasures that will never be opened”; cf. Socin, Palästina und Syrien: Handbuch für Reisende, p. 384. The Sourdel (see note 328) and Déroche, “In the Beginning,” maintained the view that most of the fragments were transferred to the Qubba only following a fire that broke out at the Umayyad Mosque in 1893. It is not unlikely that some of the books or documents damaged during the fire were then deposited at the genizah; however, Violet’s account and the references above confirm that the Qubba had been used as a repository for centuries.


316 von Soden, Reisebriefe nach Palästina; he describes his work on manuscripts at the Greek Orthodox Patriarchate in Jerusalem on pp. 56–59 and 66. On his project for a new edition of the Greek New Testament, see his work Die Schriften des Neuen Testaments in ihrer ältesten erreichbaren Textgestalt hergestellt auf Grund ihrer Textgeschichte.


318 This account relies on the excellent study by D’Ottone and Radiciotti, “I frammenti della Quabat al-Khazna di Damasco. A proposito di una scoperta sottovalutata.” This article sparked much of the recent interest in the Qubba. See also D’Ottone, “Manuscripts as Mirrors of a Multilingual and Multicultural Society: The Case of the Damascus Find”; and Bandt and Rattmann, “Die Damaskusreise Bruno Violets.”
Ronny Vollandt

Ronny Vollandt approached completion; it had increasingly caused suspicion and dismay among locals. Hastily, he photographed a selection of fragments before he departed for Berlin on July 2, 1901.\(^\text{319}\)

Another irāda of Abdul Hamid II gave permission for the collection to be sent to Berlin as a loan. Before the fragments were dispatched, however, the whole batch was inventoried and photographed by the Ottoman authorities.\(^\text{320}\) The number of fragments at this time was given as 1,558.\(^\text{321}\) The collection arrived in Berlin on June 17, 1902, and was deposited at the Royal Museums; in 1904, it was moved to the State Library. It consisted mainly of Jewish, Christian, and Samaritan texts, in a variety of scripts and languages: Greek, Hebrew, Samaritan, Latin, Coptic, Syriac, Christian Palestinian Aramaic, and even Armenian. Among the fragments, many were palimpsests or had been re-used as the bindings of books.\(^\text{322}\)

The Violet Fragment was the first find from the Damascus Genizah to be announced to the scholarly public, in 1901; this was before von Soden gave his account of the success of the mission and surveyed the major discoveries, at the Prussian Academy of Sciences and Humanities, in 1903.\(^\text{323}\) Publications on further fragments ensued until, unexpectedly after six years, the Ottomans demanded the return of the fragments in December 1908.\(^\text{324}\) A prioritized list of fifty-four fragments, prepared by von Soden, and an almost complete Syriac codex were all that could be photographed before the collection was sent back in its entirety.\(^\text{325}\) The Ottomans confirmed that the collection reached Istanbul; however, little is known of its

\(^{319}\) Violet’s photographs are found today in the Berlin-Brandenburg Academy of Science, with the shelfmark BBAW/GCS, Akz.-Nr. 481.

\(^{320}\) The inventory and photographs are said to have been deposited in two places: the Foreign Ministry and the Library of the Yıldız Palace. So far I have been unsuccessful in locating them.

\(^{321}\) Violet estimated that this portion made up only 0.5 percent of the entire Damascus Genizah; Violet, “Ein zweisprachiges Psalmfragment,” col. 384. The remaining Muslim fragments, which he was forbidden to consult, filled 150 sacks; Bandt and Rattmann, “Die Damaskusreise Bruno Violets,” p. 8. These estimations suggest a total of over 300,000 items. An inventory made in 1955 numbers 13,882 items, with a total of 211,603 pieces. In September 2017, Konrad Hirschler was able to confirm these numbers during a visit to the collection. I am indebted to him for this information.

\(^{322}\) The practice of re-using folios as book bindings has been described by D’Ottone and Radiciotti, “I framamenti,” p. 51n23, and Treu, Majuskelbruchstücke der Septuaginta, p. 215. The Violet Fragment itself is probably a particularly telling example of this practice (see below). Cases of re-use have also been described for Muslim fragments; see Déroche, “In the Beginning,” p. 72in37. On the palimpsests, see Violet in Schulthess, Christlich-palästinische Fragmente aus der Omajjaden-Moschee zu Damaskus, pp. 7–10; and Treu, Majuskelbruchstücke der Septuaginta aus Damaskus, pp. 217–19. A number of folios contain Hebrew undertexts with a Syriac overtext, Or. Sim. 6, 39r–42r, see for example, http://digital.staatsbibliothek-berlin.de/werkansicht?PPN=PN685013049&PHYSID=PHYS_0079&DMDID=DMDLOG_0001.

\(^{323}\) Violet, “Ein zweisprachiges Psalmfragment”; von Soden, “Ein Weihnachtsgeschenk,” which introduced the cache of documents to a more general readership and to the Prussian Academy of Sciences and Humanities; cf. von Soder, “Bericht.”

\(^{324}\) Three fragments in Old French were published by Tobler, “Bruchstücke altfranzösischer Dichtung aus den in der Kubbet in Damaskus gefundenen Handschriften,” p. 43. Schulthess, Christlich-palästinische Fragmente, edited the Christian Palestinian Aramaic fragments. A writ of protection by Balduin IV is seen in von Soden, “Bericht,” p. 827. The biblical fragments in Greek received the greatest attention and were included in von Soden, Die Schriften des Neuen Testaments in ihrer ältesten erreichbaren Textgestalt hergestellt auf Grund ihrer Textgeschichte, part 1, section 1, pp. x–xiii, 74, 118, 124–26.

\(^{325}\) These photographs are kept today in two folders in the Staatsbibliothek in Berlin, Or. Sim. 5 and Or. Sim. 6. The former contains a Syriac translation of Theodore of Mopsuestia’s commentary on Qoheleth, which has been published by Werner Strothmann, Das syrische Fragment des Ecclesiastes-Kommentars von Theodor von Mopsuestia: Syrischer Text mit vollständigem Wörterverzeichnis; see the digitized photographs at https://digital.staatsbibliothek-berlin.de/werkansicht?PPN=PPN730121836&PHYSID=PHYS_0005&DMDID=. Von Soden’s selection, reflecting his interest in research, mostly encompasses biblical texts (see n329 below). The second folder of photographs was thought to have been lost in the turmoil of the Second World War, but resurfaced...
whereabouts after that, although some of the fragments appear to have indeed returned to Damascus, where they were originally found.\textsuperscript{326}

Violet’s collection consists of a small, though significant, fraction of the Damascus Genizah. The larger part, which amounted to perhaps 99.5 percent of the Qubba’s contents, was transferred to Istanbul. The majority of the fragments were housed eventually at the Türk ve İslam Eserleri Müzesi, the Turkish and Islamic Arts Museum, where the collection was called Şâm evrakları “Damascus papers.”\textsuperscript{327} There Dominique Sourdél and Janine Sourdél-Thomine were granted permission to study the Şâm evrakları and took numerous photographs.\textsuperscript{328}

The Violet Fragment

The Qubba held many biblical fragments in a variety of languages.\textsuperscript{329} The Violet Fragment contains the Greek Vorlage and an Arabic translation of Psalm 77:20–31, 51–61 (MT 78). Although only the photograph is available to us, the basic codicological and paleographic features can be described.\textsuperscript{330} It consists of a parchment bifolium, with thirty-three lines on each page. The intact folio measures 23 x 18.5 cm, with 13.3 cm remaining of the second. The text is laid out in two columns, with the Septuagint on the left and an Arabic translation on the right. Both columns are written in Greek uncial scriptio continua, with dots to separate words and between twelve and fourteen letters per line. The writing block measures 18 x 14 cm. Rough-breathing signs are found, and these are rounded in shape. For the script, a dating of the end of the ninth century or the early tenth century has been proposed.\textsuperscript{331} In


\textsuperscript{327} It remains unclear when the remaining documents were transferred to Istanbul. Déroche, “In the Beginning,” p. 63, believes that they were first brought to the Archæological Museum in 1911. That part of the collection that was in good condition was then transferred to the Topkapi Palace and became part of the Emanet Hazinesi collection. In 1914, the less well-preserved documents were transferred to the Türk ve İslam Eserleri Müzesi.

\textsuperscript{329} The folder Or. Sim. 6 at the Staatsbibliothek in Berlin contains fragments from the books of Exodus and Deuteronomy (fols. 1–2), as well as Esther (fols. 3–4), in Greek, a bilingual Greek-Arabic Psalm fragment (fols. 1–3, see below), fragments from the Old and New Testaments in Christian Palestinian Aramaic (fols. 5–12), an Arabic fragment of the book of Psalms (fols. 15–16), fragments of the Gospels in Fayyumic (fols. 27), and fragments of the book of Job in Hebrew (fols. 33–42).

\textsuperscript{330} Mavroudi, “Arabic Words.”
all characteristics it conforms to the style that has been termed *maiuscula ogivalis inclinata*, an ogival inclined script for which many parallels in the corpus of ninth- to tenth-century Greek manuscripts from St. Catherine’s Monastery can be adduced. As to the ink, nothing can be said with certainty. Violet describes it as “brownish and not durable,” which one may interpret as referring to iron gall ink. Only the second folio shows ruling by a hard point to accommodate and demarcate the texts (both the Septuagint and the Arabic translation) with a perpendicular grid of lines, horizontally marking the lines of text and vertically the two columns. Ruling must have existed also on the first folio, but appears not to be visible on the photographs. Writing does not always respect the ruling. On the whole, one gets the impression of a user-produced, draft-like copy rather than a fair copy. The outer half of the second folio is severely damaged, and almost half of the Arabic translation is now missing.

The fragment shows signs of re-use. There is a double fold toward the center of the open bifolium, with a width of 1.5 cm, and several holes that cannot be understood as part of the original pricking. These seem to suggest a secondary use as a book binding, through which the spine of the wrapped book and additional stitching to attach it left their traces on the fragment. The absent part of the text, between the *verso* (verses 21–31) and the *recto* (verses 51–60) of the bifolium, covered twenty verses. In the extant part, each page contains either five or six verses, so an entire bifolium must have fallen out. Furthermore, given that quaternions were the standard quire structure of Byzantine parchment codices and the most commonly found in the Greek collection of manuscripts at St. Catherine’s Monastery, the original place

---

332 See Harlfinger, “Beispiele der Maiuscula Ogivalis Inclinata.” The Violet Fragment is mentioned there on p. 475. For further examples of this form of script, see Harlfinger, Reinsch, and Sonderkamp, *Specimina Sinaitica: Die datierten griechischen Handschriften des Katharinen-Klosters auf dem Berge Sinai, 9. bis 12. Jahrhundert*; Mavroudi, “Arabic Words,” pp. 327–28n19; and Orsini, “La maiuscola ogivale inclinata. Contributo preliminare.” I refrain from a paleographic description; that should be done by a Greek paleographer. My thanks are due to Marilena Maniaci and Pasquale Orsini, who have discussed this with me and made important comments on the script and codicology of the fragment.


334 I am indebted to Jonas Müller-Laackman for the illustrations.

335 As conjectured also by Violet, “Ein zweisprachiges Psalmfragment,” col. 426.
of the Violet Fragment in the quire can be reconstructed as the third bifolium (see image 1). The hair and the flesh sides of the fragment are clearly discernible on the photograph. If the bifolium was positioned as just proposed, then hair sides must have faced hair sides and flesh sides faced flesh sides, following what is known as the Gregory Rule. It appears, as a result of this arrangement, that the outer side of the first bifolium shows the hair side. The quire thus opens with the hair side (see image 2). Although different from that followed in other Byzantine manuscripts, this custom is characteristic of the Greek codices housed today at Sinai and other Greek fragments from the Qubba.

The Scribal Context

Both Palestine and the Damascus area, which together constituted the province of bilād al-shām in first the Umayyad and later the Abbasid Caliphate, attest to the flourishing of Greek literacy after the Muslim conquests. It is not only the Greek script, but also the particular arrangement of quires, that places the Violet Fragment in the same scribal context as a number of Sinaitic Greek codices. This observation not only is interesting to material codicology, but also leads us to a group of additional manuscripts that reveal particular parallels when

---

336 See Maniaci, "Greek Codicology. 8.3.2: The Composition of the Quires," pp. 196–97.
337 Again, one can compare the specimens discussed in Harlfinger, "Beispiele der Maiuscula Ogivalis Inclinata" and Harlfinger, Reinsch, and Sonderkamp, Specimina Sinaitica. For example, Harlfinger, "Beispiele der Maiuscula Ogivalis Inclinata," p. 464, elaborates on the feature of hair sides opening a quire, contrary to the Gregory Rule.
338 Cf. Mango, "Greek Culture in Palestine after the Arab Conquests"; and Mavroudi, "Greek Language and Education under Early Islam."
339 It would be misleading to limit this context only to Sinai or the Palestinian monasteries, such as Mar Saba or Mar Chariton. In fact, it is not known whether St. Catherine’s housed a productive scribal workshop at all. At least for the Arabic collection, it is clear that the vast majority of codices were produced elsewhere; cf. Tarras, "Building a Christian Arabic Library: Thomas of Fustat and the Scribal Workshop of Saint Catherine’s Monastery"; and Swanson, "Solomon, Bishop of Mount Sinai (Late Tenth Century AD)." Prominent examples, including MSS Sinai, Ar. 2 and 151, come from Damascus.
it comes to content and layout. Among this group we find three complete Greek and Arabic bilingual manuscripts of the book of Psalms, ranging in date from the early ninth through the tenth centuries—Sinai, MSS Gr. 34–36—and another fragment from the Qubba photographs. A further manuscript—Moscow, Russian State Library, MS 432—contains four folios of a trilingual book of Psalms in Greek, Syriac, and Arabic, and partly overlaps with the Violet Fragment. All five of these reflect the same translation as the Violet Fragment; the main difference is that the Arabic column in these is written using Arabic letters. Furthermore, three additional monolingual manuscripts with the same translation exist.

**Sinai, MS Gr. 34**

Content: Blank (2r), Arabic introduction to the book of Psalms, ending with the Lord’s Prayer (2v–4r), Greek text with Arabic translation (4v–232v), arranged in two columns with the Arabic to the right.

232 fols., corresponds to the Violet Fragment on fols. 122v–123r, 125r–126r. Ruled parchment, 19 x 18.5 cm, Greek 23–26 lines per page, Arabic 13–16 lines per page, iron gall ink, 4 bifolia/quire, following the Gregory Rule and opening with the hair side, quire signatures on the opening folio in the upper-right margins in the form of Greek numerals. More recent quire signatures on the last folio were added in Arabic abjad. It has pen trials on the inside cover and on fol. 1r. The cardboard cover was made from discarded parchment folios that were glued together, with a layer of leather on the outside.

Script: maiuscola ogivalis inclinata and Abbasid book hand

Date: copied in Mar Saba, December 929 or 930 ce

**Sinai, MS Gr. 35**

Content: Greek text with Arabic translation (1r–207v), arranged in two columns with the Arabic to the left.

207 fols., corresponds to the Violet Fragment on fols. 109r–100r, 112r–113r. Ruled parchment, 24 x 16 cm, Greek 30–31 lines per page, Arabic 19–21 lines per page, iron gall ink. Fols. 1–34 and 33–44 are later replacements and exhibit unskilled writing; on these, the Arabic faces inside, whereas in the rest of the codex it is always on the left. The original codex has 4 bifolia/quire, following the Gregory Rule and opening with the hair side. Quire signatures are found on the last folio, on the lower right margin, in Greek. New quires are marked by an asterisk on the upper-left margin. The original wood cover is intact. Further folios of this manuscript, from

---

340 I have consulted the Sinaitic manuscripts in the original; for the other manuscripts, I rely on digital images and secondary literature.
342 Based on an ultraviolet and near-infrared analysis by Dino-Lite Digital Microscope that I carried out in situ in March 2017.
343 On the dating, see Treiger, “From Theodore Abū Qurra,” p. 21n42.
Beyond Arabic in Greek Letters

the part that was later replaced, have been identified by Binggeli as the undertext of Milan, Biblioteca Ambrosiana, MS L 120 sup. (bifolia 125/132 and 139/134). Script: \textit{maiuscula ogivalis inclinata} and Abbasid book hand

Date: ninth century

\textit{Sinai, MS Gr. 36}

Content: Blank (1r–2v), Arabic introduction to the book of Psalms (3r–9v), Greek text with Arabic translation (10r–232v), arranged in two columns with the Arabic to the right.

200 fols., corresponds to the Violet Fragment on fols. 183v–184v, 187v–188v. Ruled parchment, 20 x 15 cm, Greek 22–23 lines per page, Arabic 14–18 lines per page, iron gall ink, 4 bifolia/quire, following the Gregory Rule and opening with the hair side, quire signatures found on the opening folio in the upper-right margin in the form of Greek numerals. Additional parts of the manuscript are found today as Sinai, MS Gr. NF MG 9.

Script: \textit{maiuscula ogivalis inclinata} and Abbasid book hand

Date: ninth century

\textit{Berlin, Staatsbibliothek, Cod. Or. Sim. 6 (fol. 2, fragment C)}

Content: Psalms 143:7–13 and 145:8–146:6, Greek text and Arabic translation, arranged in two columns with the Arabic to the right.

Bifolium. Unruled parchment, 16 x 14 cm, Greek 21 lines per page, Arabic 20 lines per page, fourth bifolium in the quire, opening with the hair side.

Script: \textit{maiuscula ogivalis inclinata} and Abbasid book hand

Date: ninth century

\textit{Moscow, State Library, MS 432}

Content: Psalms 70:7–16; 73:4–14; 77:28–38; and 79:9–18 in Greek, Syriac, and Arabic (in this order on both recto and verso).

4 folios, parchment, partly damaged by water, ruled by lead pencil, 29 x 23 cm, three columns in Greek, Syriac, and Arabic, 35–36 lines per page. The columns were designed by the scribe to correspond to the biblical text. An \textit{ex libris} shows that the fragments belonged to Abraham Norov (1789–1869), who was Russian minister of education in 1854 and acquired the manuscript on his journeys in Palestine. It seems to have originated in the Mar Saba Monastery.

\textsuperscript{345} Binggeli, “Les trois David, copistes arabes de Palestine aux 9e-10e s.”

\textsuperscript{346} The dating of scripts, which I arrived at in consultation with Miriam L. Hjälm (who is preparing a paleographic study on early Christian-Arabic manuscripts), is mine.

\textsuperscript{347} Rahlfs and Fraenkel, \textit{Verzeichnis der griechischen Handschriften des Alten Testaments}, 1:64–65. An image can be seen at \url{http://digital.staatsbibliothek-berlin.de/werkansicht?PPN=PPN685013049&PHYSID=PHYS_0005&DMID=DMLOG_0001}.

\textsuperscript{348} The manuscript is described in all details, with edition and facsimiles, in Pigulevskaya, “Greko-siro-arabskaya rukopis’ IX veka.” See also Treiger, “From Theodore Abū Qurra,” p. 20.
Script: *maiuscula ogivalis inclinata*, Estrangelo, and Abbasid book hand
Date: ninth century

*Sinai, MS Ar., NF, Parch. 4*

Content: Incomplete Book of Psalms.
83 fols., parchment, 134–150 x 92–98 cm, 15 lines per page. Copied by David of Ashkelon.
Script: Abbasid book hand
Date: tenth century

*Birmingham, Mingana, MS Christian Arabic Add. 137*

Content: Psalms 1–3.
1 folio, parchment, 16.2 x 12.8 cm, 19 lines per page.
Script: Abbasid book hand
Date: ninth century

*Bryn Mawr, College Library, MS BV 47*

This manuscript was originally part of the Arnold Mettler-Specker collection, on loan at Zurich library MS Or. 94. It was featured in the famous Katalog Hieresemann 500 (as no. 39), auctioned in 1948, and eventually donated to Bryn Mawr College Library.

Content: The book of Psalms; Psalms 1 and 2 and part of 3 are missing, but the rest of the 150 Psalms are extant and found on fols. 1r–71v. They are followed by a group of nine canticles (72r–79r), including the Song of Miriam, the Prayer of Moses, the Prayer of Hanna, the Prayer of Jonah, and the Magnificat of Mary. On fol. 79v there is a colophon by the scribe Buṭrus b. Yūsuf. It corresponds to the Violet Fragment on fols. 36v–37r and 37v–38r.
79 fols., ruled parchment, 19.7 x 13.4 cm, 20–22 lines per page.
Script: Abbasid book hand
Date: 304 AH, corresponding to 916/917 CE

---


The Translation

The manuscripts above place the Violet Fragment in the scribal context of ninth- to tenth-century Melkite communities. Further, they offer a text type that is much closer to it than that of Abū al-Fath ʿAbdallāh ibn al-Faḍl, which had been suggested by Violet as a point of reference. Here I present a new transcription of the Violet Fragment into Arabic script, as well as a synoptic edition of Sinai, MSS Gr. 34–36 and of MS Moscow.352 MS Bryn Mawr seems related, yet on the whole exhibits a revised translation that merits a more detailed discussion elsewhere.

---

352 In what follows, square brackets indicate my reconstruction of the text. I give the orthography as found in the manuscripts. For the sake of clarity, the hamza, which as a rule remains unmarked in the manuscripts, and basic vocalization have been added in accordance with standard Arabic orthography.
 Went down and spoke the water, so that the floods could not harm them. And God was with them and gave them food and water. And God instructed them to go and take possession of the land, and He promised to be with them and protect them. And so they went and conquered the land, as God had promised. And God was with them and gave them victory over their enemies. And they lived in peace and prosperity, as God had promised.
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Violet Fragment</th>
<th>Sinai, MS Gr. 34</th>
<th>Sinai, MS Gr. 35</th>
<th>Sinai, MS Gr. 36</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>51 (51)بعهم في مساكن خامهم</td>
<td>51 (51)عبهم بهار خامهم</td>
<td>51 (51)بعهم بأرض خامهم</td>
<td>51 (51)بعهم بهار خامهم</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>52 (52)واقف مثل القسم شعبه</td>
<td>52 (52)واقف مثل القسم شعبه</td>
<td>52 (52)واقف كما قسم شعبه</td>
<td>52 (52)واقف كما قسم شعبه</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>وصفهم مثل رعة الدنيا</td>
<td>وصفهم مثل رعة الدنيا</td>
<td>وصفهم مثل رعة الدنيا</td>
<td>وصفهم مثل رعة الدنيا</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>53 (53)وهدواهم على الرجا وهم</td>
<td>53 (53)وهدواهم على الرجا وهم</td>
<td>53 (53)وهدواهم على الرجا وهم</td>
<td>53 (53)وهدواهم على الرجا وهم</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>54 (54)وأخذوه غيرهم من الشاطئ</td>
<td>54 (54)وأخذوه غيرهم من الشاطئ</td>
<td>54 (54)وأخذوه غيرهم من الشاطئ</td>
<td>54 (54)وأخذوه غيرهم من الشاطئ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>55 (55)وأخذوه وجد منهم هذا الجبل الذي استفادت بينه</td>
<td>55 (55)وأخذوه وجد منهم هذا الجبل الذي استفادت بينه</td>
<td>55 (55)وأخذوه وجد منهم هذا الجبل الذي استفادت بينه</td>
<td>55 (55)وأخذوه وجد منهم هذا الجبل الذي استفادت بينه</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>56 (56)ورأوها مجنياً</td>
<td>56 (56)ورأوها مجنياً</td>
<td>56 (56)ورأوها مجنياً</td>
<td>56 (56)ورأوها مجنياً</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>57 (57)وجروا من أعامهم</td>
<td>57 (57)وجروا من أعامهم</td>
<td>57 (57)وجروا من أعامهم</td>
<td>57 (57)وجروا من أعامهم</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ومسكن الفيل</td>
<td>ومسكن الفيل</td>
<td>ومسكن الفيل</td>
<td>ومسكن الفيل</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>58 (58)وأخذوه بهاهم</td>
<td>58 (58)وأخذوه بهاهم</td>
<td>58 (58)وأخذوه بهاهم</td>
<td>58 (58)وأخذوه بهاهم</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>59 (59)ورأوها مجنياً</td>
<td>59 (59)ورأوها مجنياً</td>
<td>59 (59)ورأوها مجنياً</td>
<td>59 (59)ورأوها مجنياً</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>60 (60)ورأوها مجنياً</td>
<td>60 (60)ورأوها مجنياً</td>
<td>60 (60)ورأوها مجنياً</td>
<td>60 (60)ورأوها مجنياً</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

539 Violet
560 Violet
561 Violet
562 Violet
563 Violet
564 Violet
565 Violet
566 Violet

Violet suggests, as in Sinai, MS Gr. 34. The reconstruction here is based on the majority of manuscripts.

Violet
[sic].

Violet
[sic].
The manuscript sources, edited above, contain the same text type, with minor deviations. Variation can be observed on the lexical level, as for example in v. 21, *abṭāʾ* “he held himself back” in MSS Sinai, Ar. 35 and 36, while the Violet Fragment and MS Sinai, Ar. 34 read *imtanʿa* “he refrained.” In v. 59, the Violet Fragment and MS Sinai, Ar. 35 translate *ἐξουδένωσεν* “he abhorred [Israel]” as *afsala* “he pronounced against”; MSS Ar. 34 and 36, in contrast, have *ardhala* “he rejected.” In addition to this lexical variation, there is a clear tendency, especially in the manuscripts from St. Catherine’s, which are dated slightly later, to adjust the translation to the rules of Classical Arabic. Examples can be found in changes of word order or in the introduction of conjunctions (see below for both of these). In many respects, the Violet Fragment seems to be furthest from such a standardization. In addition, it shows some non-standard features on the morphological and phonological level (see chapter 2 of this book).

The manuscripts contain a translation of the book of Psalms that seems to have been current among Melkite communities in *bilād al-shām* in the ninth and tenth centuries, possibly earlier. ʿAbdallāh ibn al-Faḍl, deacon of Antioch in the eleventh century, produced an Arabic version of Psalms that, as already observed by Violet, shows clear affinities to this earlier text. His translation may in many respects be seen as a revision and standardization of the earlier version transmitted in the first group of manuscripts. Similar attempts to produce a linguistically more acceptable and textually less oscillating edition were made by Saadiah Gaon (882–942 ce) for the Arabic version of the Pentateuch in use among the Rabbanite Jewish community and by Abū Saʿīd, active in thirteenth-century Egypt, for the Samaritan Arabic version.367 Prompted by the wish to establish a linguistically superior and textually reliable version, in 1252 al-Asʿad Abū al-Faraṣ Hibat Allāh b. al-ʿAssāl produced a critical edition of the Arabic gospels that was in use among the Copts.368

Translation Techniques

Starting from the relationship between translation and Vorlage, a study of translation techniques aims to describe the strategy employed by the translator to transfer particular structures, concepts, or ideas from the source language into the target language. As Barr puts it in

---

367 Vollandt, *Arabic Versions*, pp. 80–84 and 87–89.
his seminal work *The Typology of Literalism in Ancient Bible Translations*, the description of converging tendencies “has to concern itself much of the time with variations within a basically literal approach; different kinds of literality, diverse levels of literal connection, and various kinds of departure from the literal.”

He emphasizes that varying degrees of literalism on different levels need to be identified. A translation may be literal on one level but tend to greater freedom on another. In addition, Barr pointed out that a proper characterization of translation technique requires identifying the translator’s specific concerns. A full understanding of the translation strategy depends on knowing the translator’s motivation and must take account of the translation’s intended use. Translations meant to serve communal educational needs are usually marked by greater literalism; those produced for didactic purposes in the context of the schoolhouse would differ quite naturally from those directed to an educated elite.

Concentrating on the Septuagint, Barr isolated six categories used for measuring the differences between a more literal and a less literal translation. Exploring two of these will lead us through a brief and tentative survey of the translation techniques found in the Violet Fragment and the manuscripts related to it.

Barr’s first category, “the division into elements or segments,” addresses the way in which the individual elements of the source text are represented in translation. It assesses the translator’s underlying principle for segmenting his Vorlage into units, ranging from entire sentences or phrases to single lexical items and on to attached morphemes, particles, and conjunctions.

The Violet Fragment, as a rule, shows an uncompromising concern with rendering every individual element in the Greek Vorlage by a closely corresponding equivalent in the target language, often at the expense of the stylistic and grammatical rules of Arabic. On the syntactic level, there is a close mirroring of the Greek word order, resulting in a strict word-by-word translation. A good illustration can be found in verse 20.

![Verse 20 in Greek and Arabic](image)

One can observe that word order is strictly retained. Greek μὴ καὶ ἄρτον δύναται δοῦναι, for example, is rendered as لعل وخبز يقدر يعطي. *La‘lla* followed by *wa* is not a structure of Classical Arabic and has to be regarded as an imitation of μὴ καὶ, which introduces interrogative clauses in biblical Greek. MS Sinai, Gr. 34 shows a certain discomfort with the structure and has replaced *la‘lla* with *hal*. Continuing on with this segment of text, the Violet Fragment has *yaqdur yu‘tī*, omitting a conjunction, which once again mirrors the syntax of the Greek text, δύναται δοῦναι. MS Sinai, Gr. 36, which reads *yaqdur an yu‘tī*, has amended the text and introduced a conjunction, as would be expected in Classical Arabic.

Verse 27 furnishes further examples of the practice of imitative renderings.

---

(27) καὶ ἔβρεξεν ἐπ᾽ αὐτοὺς ὡσεὶ χοῦν σάρκας καὶ ὡσεὶ ἄμμον θαλασσῶν πετεινὰ πτερωτά

(27) He rained upon them flesh like the dust and like sand of the seas winged birds.

Each unit of the source text (conjunction-verb-preposition-pronoun-preposition of similarity-noun-noun-conjunction-preposition of similarity-noun-noun-noun-adjective) is reflected, in the same order, in the translation. What is more, nouns agree in number. While the dust (χοῦν/اترطب) and the sand (ἄμμον/ترامع) are in the singular, the flesh (σάρκας/لحم), the sea (θαλασσῶν/البحر), and the birds (πετεινὰ/طير) are in the plural.

The word order is even retained in the Violet Fragment in cases where it seems very alien to Classical Arabic, where only nominal clauses are usually ordered subject - predicate. The most common word order in verbal clauses is verb - subject - object, although this sequence may be modified after certain conjunctions or particles. To retain the formal structure of the source text, in particular its chiasms, the syntactic rules of Classical Arabic are ignored. For example, in verse 23 of the Violet Fragment, the second stichos—wa-abwāb al-samāʾ fataḥa “and the doors of heaven he opened”—translates καὶ θύρας οὐρανοῦ ἀνέῳξεν “and the doors of heaven he opened.” MS Sinai, Ar. 36, in contrast, has wa-fataḥa abwāb al-samāʾ “and he opened the doors of heaven,” which brings the translation into alignment with the prescribed word order of Classical Arabic. A further example can be found in verse 29: καὶ τὴν ἐπιθυμίαν αὐτῶν ἤνεγκεν αὐτοῖς “and their desire he gave to them” is translated by fronting the object in the Violet Fragment, giving wa-shahawatuhum jāb lahum “and their desire he brought them.” Bringing it closer to Classical Arabic, MS Sinai, Ar. 34 inverts the order, reading wa-atāhum bi-shahawatihim “and he brought them their desire.”

Barr’s second category for measuring differences between translations, “quantitative addition or subtraction of elements,” looks at the quantitative divergence of a translation from the original. For example, there may be textual expansions of a theological and interpretative nature, ranging from the addition of a single word to phrases and lengthy excursuses. The opposite tendency, subtraction or omission, reflects a translator’s choice to leave elements of the source text out of the translation. Neither of these, however, occurs in the Violet Fragment: it neither adds nor subtracts anything from the source text. The translation’s main feature lies precisely in this uncompromising metaphrastic imitation of the Greek source text in all its details. In the words of D. Tené, the translation constructs a certain “semantic transparency” to serve a didactic purpose. The ultraliteral approach, as a pedagogical tool in scholastic environments, goes back to antiquity. Aquila’s famous retranslation of the Bible into Greek, often described as a mirror translation, is said to have had a didactic end. Outside the Bible, another illustration can be found in a number of bilingual texts of Vergil and others, with the Latin and Greek in parallel columns.
Conclusion

From the above, a number of conclusions can be drawn. The first suggests viewing the Arabic translation in the larger context of additional manuscripts that contain the same text type with minor variations. The Violet Fragment reflects a translation that is found also in other witnesses and, hence, cannot be understood as a textual unicum or ad hoc translation. The Arabic translation, represented in the Violet Fragment and other manuscripts, shows an un-compromising concern with remaining as close as possible to the formal structure of the Greek Vorlage. It preserves the word order, number, and the chiastic arrangement, irrespective of Classical Arabic usage. Being highly literal, the translation facilitated the comprehension and memorization of the biblical text in Greek, which was found alongside its translation. The translation appears to have complemented the Greek, not only on the page but possibly also in a liturgical setting, glossing it word by word.

Unique, however, was the use of Greek letters. In this detail the scribe of the Violet Fragment differs from all other scribal embodiments of the translation and sets it apart from them. But why did the scribe copy the Arabic in Greek letters? In transcribing the Arabic phonetically, the scribe relied on the phonetic and orthographic conventions of Classical Greek, which he presumably knew from reciting the Septuagint or might perhaps have learned from handbooks of Greek grammar, as Mavroudi has shown. Nonetheless, his orthography does exhibit an awareness of the pronunciation of Greek as it was spoken in his time; this can be seen, for example, in the interchangeable use of Eta and Iota to mark a short /i/ vowel. This suggests that the scribe may well have spoken both contemporary Greek and Arabic and, to put it in different words, possessed a bilingual competence. Classical Greek, the language his ecclesiastical affairs would have been conducted in, appears to have been acquired through scholastic education. The mere fact that the fragment contains the book of Psalms seems to strongly suggest a liturgical setting; however, an appropriate understanding of liturgical Greek had to be ensured by an ultraliteral translation into his and his congregation’s vernacular, Arabic. This practice is reminiscent of Hebrew scriptural readings being accompanied by an Aramaic translation, the Targum, in the Jewish context. The Talmud prescribes that the Targum be recited in the synagogue by a designated individual, the meturgeman. The meturgeman had to be distinct from the person who recited the Hebrew weekly portion. Also distinct was the mode of reading: while the Torah was chanted from an unpointed scroll, the Targum had to be performed with no recourse to a written text. The distinction was necessary, so as to convey the difference in hierarchy between the Hebrew text and the oral-performative interpretation in the Aramaic vernacular. In the public reading, the Hebrew Torah and the Aramaic Targum were performed verse by verse, antiphonally intermitting each other.

It is known that Arabic was used for certain parts of the liturgy, such as the scriptural readings, in many urban as well as monastic communities in the medieval Middle East. There is evidence that the Psalms were already being recited in Arabic prior to the ninth century. For example, a monk at Mar Sabas is reported to have recited the Psalms in Arabic. Another

374 Cf. Alexander, “The Targumim and the Rabbinic Rules for the Delivery of the Targum.” The hierarchy of the two texts is also reflected in further stipulations. Whereas bodily blemishes, for example blindness, or improper clothes would disqualify a person from chanting the Torah, these are acceptable for the meturgeman.
monk astonished a Western pilgrim to Jerusalem at the beginning of the ninth century, when “he conducted his psalmody in the language of the Saracens” (Sarracenica lingua psallit).\textsuperscript{376}

However, despite some use of Arabic, the traditional liturgical languages—Greek, Syriac, or Coptic—continued to be primary in liturgy. In this context, it is important to stress that the introduction of Arabic was not intended to contest the status of these elevated languages of prestige, nor were the Arabic translations intended to displace or supplant the earlier texts. Arabic remained, in comparison to the traditional languages, of a secondary rank. This is also reflected in the mise-en-page of many bilingual manuscripts, where the translations occupy a much smaller space than the original texts.\textsuperscript{377} In the case of the Violet Fragment, then, one could conjecture that the scribe was attempting to transfer, via the script, some of the prestige of the liturgical language, Greek, to the translation.

There are additional sources that might suggest a similar dynamic in a Coptic-Arabic liturgical or didactic context. In the 1899 inventory of the Maronite Library of Mar Elias Church in Aleppo, for example, Harfūsh lists rasā‘il Bulūs ‘arabī bi-khaṭṭ qubṭī “Arabic Pauline Epistles in Coptic script.”\textsuperscript{378} In 1926, Sohby published thirty-five folios of an Arabic text in Coptic script from the thirteenth century; this text was apparently intended for the instruction of novices, and it draws mainly upon the Sayings of the Fathers (Apophthegmata Patrum) and the Orations of Abba Isaiah of Scetis.\textsuperscript{379}

Even though the current whereabouts of the Violet Fragment are unknown, this investigation into its material aspects, as far as they are discernible on the surviving photograph, places the fragment into a particular scribal context. This allows us to go beyond the undoubt- edly important study of the linguistic features behind the Greek transcriptions and provides important contextualizing evidence. It shares its scribal context with a number of other manuscripts, some of which are fragmentary like it is, while others are complete. With some minor variation, these manuscripts contain the same text type and were produced between the ninth and tenth centuries. All of them were produced by the Melkite community before ʿAbdallāh ibn al-Faḍl, deacon of Antioch in the eleventh century, set out to provide a standardized and linguistically improved Arabic version of the book of Psalms. The unparalleled use of Greek script to write Arabic (excluding epigraphic evidence), which made the Violet Fragment famous and led to many conjectures about its dating in the past, may be linked to a liturgical setting that also can be inferred from its translation techniques.

\textsuperscript{376} Tobler and Molinier, \textit{Itinera Hierosolymitana et descriptiones Terrae Sanctae}, p. 302.
\textsuperscript{377} As can be seen, for example, in MSS Sinai, Greek 34–36. The width of the column containing the Arabic translation unit is smaller, almost to a ratio of 2:1. This can also be observed in many additional Coptic-Arabic bilingual manuscripts.
\textsuperscript{378} Harfūsh, “The Library of Our Maronite Denomination in the Protected City of Aleppo.” This manuscript is not found in Harfūsh’s list of Bibles, which suggests that it was probably lost after the 1899 inventory and before he compiled his Bible list. I thank Vevian Zaki for drawing my attention to this reference.
Appendix 2

Pre-Islamic Graeco-Arabic Texts

This appendix contains examples of pre-Islamic Arabic texts and anthroponyms written in Greek letters as a point of reference for the language and orthography of the PF. I have included texts that occur in either a Safaitic bilingual or geographical context.

A1

Location: Wādī Salmā, Northeastern Jordan
Photo: S. Abbadi; tracing: A. Al-Jallad.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>ΑΥΣΟϹΟΥΔΟΥ</th>
<th>ΒΑΝΑΟΥΧΑΖΙΜ</th>
<th>ΜΟΥΑΛΙΔΑΜΙΑΘΑ</th>
<th>ΟΥΑΜΙΣΕΙΑΖΑΘΑΟΕΩ</th>
<th>ΒΑΝΑΑΑΑΔΑΥΡΑ</th>
<th>ΑΟΥΑΕΙΡΑΥΒΑΚΛΑ</th>
<th>ΒΙΧΑΝΟΥ</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ʾ Aws (bin) ḥāḍ (?) (bin) Bannāʾ (bin) Kazim ʾal-ʿidāmiyy ʾatawa mis-seʿī ʿsatāw wa Bannāʾa ʿad-dawra wa yirʿaw baqla bi-kānūn</td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\[\text{ʾ Aws (bin) ḥāḍ (?) (bin) Bannāʾ (bin) Kazim ʾal-ʿidāmiyy ʾatawa mis-seʿī ʿsatāw wa Bannāʾa ʿad-dawra wa yirʿaw baqla bi-kānūn}\]
Translation: 'Aws son of Hūḏ (?) son of Bannā' son of Kazim, the ’Idāmite, came from Sīʿ to spend the winter with Bannā' in this place and they pastured on fresh herbage during Kānūn

Notes

1) The author most likely identifies himself as an Edomite, Safaitic ʿdmy.
2) The 3ms verb corresponding to Classical Arabic ʿatā preserves the final triphthong, ʔatawa, like Safaitic ʿtw.
3) The accusative case is attested in baqla “fresh herbage” and in the name bannā’a, where it follows the wāw al-māʿiyyah.
4) The *s of the infinitive “to spend the winter” is spelled with a mirrored Zeta, ζαθαοε.
5) The name of the town of Sīʿ is spelled identically to its transcription in Greek inscriptions, and corresponds to Nabataean sʿyʿ and Safaitic sʰʕ. This suggests a pronunciation /seʕīʕā/.

AMGreek 1

Location: Wādī al-Ḥašād, northeastern Jordan
Photo: A. al-Manaser; tracing: A. Al-Jallad.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek</th>
<th>Normalized Greek</th>
<th>Safaitic</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ΘΑΙΜΟΣΓΑΦΑΛΟΥ</td>
<td>θαιμος Γαφαλου</td>
<td>l tm bn ghfl</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>[le-taym ben gahapus]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Milik, “Une bilingue araméo-grecque.”
AMGreek 2

Location: Wādī al-Ḥašād, northeastern Jordan


Photo: A. al-Manaser; tracing: A. Al-Jallad.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek</th>
<th>Normalized Greek</th>
<th>Safaitic</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ΓΑΥΤΟΣ ΑΠΗΛΘΕΝΕΙΣΤΟΝ ΑΚΕΛΟΝΣΑΙΡΟΥ</td>
<td>Γαυτος ἀπῆλθεν [ε]ις τόν Ακελον Σαιρου</td>
<td>l ġṯ w thll ṭfw ṣl s'r</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Gawtos departed into the Akel of Sair</td>
<td>[le-ġawṯ wa-tağhalla ʿapʰwāha ʿaqel sayr]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>By ġawṯ and he departed (this place) into the foremost part of the protected area of Sayr</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Notes

1) The spelling of the name ġṯ in Greek contains two rare strategies: the rendering of the voiced uvular fricative with Gamma and the interdental with Tau. As argued in the editio princeps, the use of Tau cannot be interpreted as representing the loss of interdentals in the Arabic. Since plain t is usually represented by Theta (see AMGreek 1), it, instead, confirms that Greek still realized Theta as [tʰ] and so there was no direct equivalent to Arabic ŧ [θ].
AMGreek 3

Location: Tell al-ʻAbed, northeastern Jordan
Photo: M.C.A. Macdonald; tracing: A. Al-Jallad.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek</th>
<th>Normalized Greek</th>
<th>Safaitic</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ΒΑΛΕΣΟΣΑΝΑΜΟΥΤΟΥΚΑΔΑΜΟΥ</td>
<td>Βαλεσος Αναμου το Καδαμου</td>
<td>l bls bn ḫm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Bāles son of ʔanʕam son of Qadam</td>
<td>[le-bāles ben ʔanʕam]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>By Bāles son of ʔanʕam</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
WH 1860 = Greek 2

Present Location: Amman Museum (14174)
Editio Princeps: Winnett and Harding, Inscriptions from Fifty Safaitic Cairns.
Photo: F.V. Winnett (OCIANA).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek</th>
<th>Normalized Greek</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ΟΥΑΒΑΛΛΑΣ ΤΑΝΝΗΛΟΥΤΟΥ [] ΟΥΑΒΑΛΛΟΥ</td>
<td>Ουαβαλλας Ταννηλου του Ουαβαλλου</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Wahballāh son of Ḣannʔel</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>son of Wahballāh</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Notes

1) The Greek spelling shows that the name whblh is not wahb-lāh but wahb-allāh, with an elided glottal stop.
2) The spelling of Safaitic ṭ = ẓ with Tau suggests a voiceless realization, probably [θˁ].
3) The same three names begin the Safaitic inscription WH 1849 and was likely authored by the same man.
WH 3563 = Greek 3

Location: Northeastern Jordan.

Editio Princeps: Winnett and Harding, Inscriptions from Fifty Safaitic Cairns.

Tracing: F.V. Winnett (OCIANA).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek</th>
<th>Normalized Greek</th>
<th>Safaitic (WH 3562)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ΜΑΝΟΣΙΑΙΘΕΟΥΜΝΗΣΘΗ</td>
<td>Μανος Ιαθεου μνησθή</td>
<td>l m’n bn yt’ bn ‘ts’ ḏ ḏ ḡṣ’y [w] wld h-mʿzy w qnt h-s’n’ ḏ ḏ ḏ ḍ lt sʿlm le maʿn bn yayeʿ ben ‘ts ḏi ḏ ḍ ḡṣ’y [w] wa-] wallada ham-meʿzaya wa qanta haṣ-ṣāneʿa pʿa ḥa-ḥa “lte salema By Maʿn son of Yayeʿ son of ‘ts1 of the lineage of ḡṣ2y and he helped the goats to give birth and feared the enemy so, O Lāt, may he be secure</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

May Maʿn son of Yayteʿ ben of the lineage of ḡs2y be remembered

Notes

1) The Greek and Safaitic clearly refer to the same person even though their content is not connected.
Location: Wādī Rushaydah, Isawi, Syria
Photo and tracing: M.C.A. Macdonald (OCIANA).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek</th>
<th>Normalized Greek</th>
<th>Safaitic (WR.C 5), associated text</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ΣΑΑΡΟΣΧΕΣΕΜΑ ΝΟΥΣΑΙΦΗΝΟΣ ΦΥΛΗΣΧΑΥΝΗ ΝΩΝ</td>
<td>Σααρος Χεσεμανου Σαιφηνος φυλης Χαυνηνων Σαιγαρ son of Keхsemаn the Safaitite of the lineage of Kawn</td>
<td>lʾtм bn rb [w] wgd mly ʾśr [le-ʔatamm ben rabb [wa] wagada malāya ʾsαfār] By ʔatamm son of Rabb and he found the words of Saʕār</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΜΑΑΙΑΝΗϹ</td>
<td>mʾyn</td>
<td>[maʕyān]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΔΗΒΟϹ</td>
<td>ʾdb</td>
<td>[deʔb]</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Notes

1) This Greek inscription was found and read by a certain ʾtm son of Rb, who recognized the Greek Σααρος as Safaitic ʾśr..
2) As the editio princeps points out, the Greek group name Σαιφηνος must correspond to the lineage group ʾḍf = /šayf/, demonstrating again the transcription of Old Arabic ʾḍ with Sigma.
3) The author of the Greek inscription likely authored inscription 1 in Al-Rousan, Nuqūš ʾṢafāwiyyah min Wādī Qaṣṣāb.
J1-J2

Location: Wādī Shām, Isawi, Syria
Photo and tracing: M.C.A. Macdonald (OCIANA).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek</th>
<th>Normalized Greek</th>
<th>Safaitic</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ΕΝΟΣ ΛΟΒΑΙΑΘΟΥ</td>
<td>Ενος Λοβαιαθου Henʾ son of Lobayʔat</td>
<td>l hnʾ bn lbʾt bn ṣ1 ḏ ʾl mlk f h lt sʾlm [le-henʾ? ben lobayʔ?at ben ṣaws ḏi ṣāl mālek pha hā-lāt salema] ‘by Henʾ son of Lobayʔat son of ṣaws of the lineage of Mlk, so, O Lāt, may he be secure’</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Notes

1) Notice the absence of any representation of the h or ṣ in the name hnʾ; the glottal stop is represented by a hiatus in lbʾt.
C 2823-2824 (+ Greek)

Location: Zalaf (j) In the neighborhood of Zalaf, near Wādī al-Shām; 32.9269; 37.3296
Editio Princeps: Ryckmans, CIS V. Tracing: M. Dunand (OCIANA).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek</th>
<th>Normalized Greek</th>
<th>Safaitic</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ΜΝΗΣΘΗΣΑΜΕΘΟΣ</td>
<td>Mnēsthē Samethos Αλιζου του</td>
<td>Λσ Ṃt bn ḫ ls bn ḡ dd bn 'n ḡ ʿl ḡg [le-śāmet ben ḫaliṣ ben ḡ addīdān ben ḡ ay n ḡ ʿl ḡ gg]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΑΛΙΖΟΥΤΟΥΑΔΔ[ΐ]</td>
<td>Alizou tou</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ΝΟΥΑΓΓΗΝΟΣ</td>
<td>Ηαγηνος</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Notes

The problematic Greek text was ingeniously restored by Milik, “Notes.”
1) Note the non-representation of [h] in Greek transcription in the name ḫls = Αλιζου.
WR.D 3 + Greek

Location: Wādī Rushaydah, Syria
Editio Princeps: Macdonald, Literacy and Identity.
Photo: M.C.A. Macdonald (OCIANA).

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek</th>
<th>Normalized Greek</th>
<th>Safaitic</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ΜΝΗΣΘΗΝΑΣΡΗΛΟΣΑΛΟΥΟΥ</td>
<td>Μνησθή Νασρηλός Αλουου</td>
<td>lnṣrʾlbn Iw</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>May Naṣrʾel son of ʕalw be</td>
<td>[le-naṣrʾel ben ʕalw]</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>remembered</td>
<td>By Naṣrʾel son of ʕalw</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Notes

1) Note the use of ου to represent consonantal  w in word-final position in the spelling of the Safaitic ʿlw.
Location: Al-Suwaydah, Syria


Photo: M.C.A. Macdonald (OCIANA).

Notes

i) The pretonic /a/ of the name katīl displays raising, as in the Petra Papyri, and could also suggest that the Epsilon of the first name could also reflect an etymological /a/, from *baʔār. 381
Location: Al-Suwaydah, Syria

Editio Princeps: OCIANA, unpublished.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek</th>
<th>Normalized</th>
<th>Phonetic reconstruction and Safaitic equivalent</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>ΑΟΥΑΔΗΛ</td>
<td>Αουαδηλ</td>
<td>[ʕawāḏ-ʔal] = ʿwḏʾl</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**Notes**

1) This is one of the few examples of a non-Hellenized Arabic name from the pre-Islamic period.
GS 4

Location: Unknown

Editio Princeps: OCIANA, unpublished.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>ΣΟΕΔΟΣ</th>
<th>Σοεδος χίρια</th>
<th>Soʕayd served as a hired man (?) (by his) hands (?)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>[Χ]ΙΡΙΑ</td>
<td>[soʕayd kiriya] (?)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Notes

1) The first name is most likely the diminutive of sʿd [saʕad].
2) This word [Χ]ΙΡΙΑ is difficult to interpret. It may be an attempt to render Greek χέρια "hands." The signature ktb yd-h, 'the writing of his hand,' is common in the Nabataean inscriptions and indeed may have been what the writer was aiming at. On the other hand, we may take it as a transcription of a verb, kry “to be a hired man,” implying the type of regressive assimilation encountered in the modern Arabic dialects, [kiriya] < *kariya.
The Psalm Fragment

Fascimile by Violet, “Psalmfragment”

Folio 1 Recto
1. ΠΕΤΕΙΛΟ ΑΥΤΟΥ.
2. ΕΙΣ ΠΛΙΚΜ ΝΗΝ.
3. ΑΠΡΕΝΝΟΤΟΝ
4. ΣΩΤΟΥ.
5. ΚΑΙ ΕΠΗΡΑΓΕΝΕΝ
6. ΤΗ ΔΥΝΑΜΕΙΑΥ
7. ΤΟΥ ΛΙΒΑ.
8. ΚΑΙ ΕΒΡΕΓΕΝ ΕΝΑ
9. ΤΟΙΕ ΣΟΕΙΧΝΟΥ.
10. ΣΑΡΚΑΣ.
11. ΚΑΙ ΣΕΙ ΑΜΙΩΝ
12. ΘΑΛΑΣΣΩΝ ΠΕΤΕΙ
13. ΝΑ ΠΤΕΡΩΤΑ.
14. ΚΑΙ ΕΝΕΝΕΚΑΝΕΙΣ
15. ΕΙΝ ΣΟΝ ΤΗΝ ΠΑ
16. ΣΜΒΟΛΗΣ ΑΥΤΩ
17. Υ. Ω. ΤΩ
18. ΣΚΗΝΩ, ΑΤΩ
19. ΑΥΤΩ.
20. ΚΑΙ ΕΦΑΡΟΝ ΚΑΙ
21. ΕΝΕΝΠΙΣΘΑΚΑΝ
22. ΣΦΟΡΑ.
23. ΚΑΙ ΤΗΝ ΕΠΙΘΥ
24. ΜΙΑΝ ΑΥΤΩΝΗ.
25. ΝΕΓΚΕΝ ΑΥΤΟΙΣ
26. ΟΥ ΚΕΣΤΕΡΓΗΝ.
27. ΑΠΟΤΕ ΛΟΛΑ
28. ΜΙΑΣΑΥΤΗ.
29. ΕΤΙ ΤΗ ΧΡ.
30. ΕΥ ΟΥΞ.
31. ΤΟΜΑ.
32. ΚΑΙ ΟΡΓ. ΕΥ Θ.
33. ΛΑ. ΥΜ. ΑΕΙΤΕ Υ ΜΕΛΛΕΥ.
34. ΛΑ. ΥΛ. ΕΛ ΤΕΙΤΗ
35. ΜΙΝ. ΕΛ ΣΕΜΑ.
36. ΟΑ. ΑΤΕ ΒΗ ΚΟΥ
37. ΕΤΥ. ΕΛ ΓΑ
38. ΣΙΡ.
39. ΟΑ. ΑΜ ΤΑΡ ΓΑΛΕΙ
40. ΥΜ. ΜΙΘΑ ΕΛ ΤΥ
41. ΡΑΒ. ΛΥ ΧΟΥΜ.
42. ΟΑ ΜΙΘΑ ΡΑΜΛ.
43. ΕΛ ΒΟΥ ΧΟΥΡ ΤΗ
44. ΟΥΡ ΜΥΓΝΗ ΧΑΥ
45. ΦΑΟΑ ΚΑΛΑΤ
46. ΦΗ ΟΑΣΑΤ ΙΑΣ.
47. ΚΕΡ ΥΜ ΧΑΥΛ
48. ΧΝ ΕΜ ΥΜ.
49. ΦΑ. ΑΚΕΛΟΥ ΟΑ.
50. ΧΕΒΙΓΟΥ ΑΕΓΕ
51. ΑΑ.
52. ΟΑ. ΧΕ. ΥΟΕΤ ΥΜ.
53. ΑΕΒ-ΛΑ ΥΜ.
54. Μ. ΙΟΥΓ-ΔΕΜΟΥ.
55. Ε ΥΟΕΤ ΥΜ.
56. ΟΑ. ΓΙΝΔ ΜΑ ΚΕΝ.
57. ΕΛ ΤΑΓΑΜ ΦΗ
58. ΦΑ ΥΗ ΥΜ.
59. ΑΡΥΓΑ. ΑΛΛΑΥ.
Ahmad Al-Jallad

Folio 2 Recto
πονού αυτών: τερ. β. 
ἐν τοῖς σκίνω 
μασίν χάμ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ἐρωσέως ποιήστ 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ. 

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.

καὶ ἀπειρούσσει 
ον αυτοῦ.
Plate 1. Photograph of the Damascus Psalm Fragment.
STAATSBIBLIOTHEK ZU BERLIN—Preußischer Kulturbesitz, Orient abteilung, Mss simulata orientalia 6, fol. 60; 59 (used with permission)
Plate 2. Photograph of the Damascus Psalm Fragment. STAATSBIBLIOTHEK ZU BERLIN—Preußischer Kulturbesitz, Orientabteilung. Mss simulata orientalia 6, fol. 58; 61 (used with permission)
Sub-Heading and Subject Index

Chapter 1
History of Arabic, 1

Chapter 2
The Writing System, 8
  Orthography, 9
Phonology
  Short Vowels, 13
  Long Vowels, 14
  Diphthongs, 15
  Triphthongs, 16
Consonants
  Stops and interdents, 16
  The Velar and Pharyngeal Fricatives, 16
  The Status of *gīm, 17
  The Status of *šīn, 17
  The šād, 17
  The ḏ and ḏ (= ḍ), 18
  The qāf, 18
  The Velarized l, 18
Nominal Morphology, 19
  Final Short Vowels, 21
  Vestiges of Case, 22
  The Feminine Ending, 23
  The Definite Article, 24
  Plurals, 24
  Pronouns, 25
  The Prepositions, 27
  Conjunctions, 28
The Verb, 28
  Prefix Conjugation, 30
Syntax, 34

Chapter 3
Dating the Psalm Fragment, 35
  Limits of Paleography, 39
  The Nature of the Transcription System and Its Date, 40
  Dating and Localizing the Language, 46
    The Lateral ḏ and Emphatic Interdental ḍ, 47
    The Reflex of Triphthongs, 47
    The Relative Pronoun, 49
    The Definite Article, 49
    Vowel Quality, 50
    The Feminine Ending, 51
    Prothesis, 51
    Reviewing the Linguistic Facts, 52
  Excursus: Dialect of Ghassān, 52
  Bringing It All Together, 55

Chapter 4
Old and Middle Arabic, 57
  The QCT and First-Islamic-Century Documents Taking Orthography Seriously, 59
  From the QCT to the First-Islamic-Century Material and Beyond, 63
  Old Ḥīgāzī in the Grammatical Sources, 67
  Colloquial Features in Direct Speech in the QCT?, 68
  Whence Classical Arabic? A Proposal, 69
  Excursus: ʕarabī mubīn, 73

Appendix 1
Introduction, 93
  Provenance, 94
  The Violet Fragment, 97
  The Scribal Context, 99
  The Translation, 103
  Translation Techniques, 106
  Conclusions, 109

Appendix 2
A1, 111
AMGreek 1, 112
AMGreek 2, 113
## General Index

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Term</th>
<th>Page Numbers</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Abbasid</td>
<td>99–102</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abdallah ibn al-Faḍl</td>
<td>8, 93–94, 103, 110</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Abū-Karib</td>
<td>54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Anaphora of Saint James</td>
<td>39, 42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ancient South Arabian</td>
<td>3, 52</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Armenian</td>
<td>43–44, 96</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Banī Jafnah</td>
<td>54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Barth-Ginsberg's law</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>bilingual</td>
<td>24, 37, 39, 41–42, 50, 93, 97, 100, 108–11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Cairo Genizah</td>
<td>94</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Christian Palestinian Aramaic</td>
<td>39, 56, 96–97</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Dadanitic</td>
<td>49, 51, 58, 60–61</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>diphthong</td>
<td>13, 15, 40–41, 62, 82</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dirham</td>
<td>44–45</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>dual</td>
<td>21, 51</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ecclesiastical terms</td>
<td>41</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Egypt</td>
<td>17–18, 21, 40–41, 44, 50, 66, 94–95, 106</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>epigraphic</td>
<td>2–3, 5, 59, 110</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hadith</td>
<td>1, 71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hebrew</td>
<td>16, 31, 52, 56, 60, 62, 64, 68, 74, 76, 83, 96–97, 109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hebrew Bible</td>
<td>75, 83</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Hismaic</td>
<td>16, 48, 58, 63</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Gəʕəz</td>
<td>31, 74</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>graffiti</td>
<td>4, 38, 50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>grammarians, Arabic</td>
<td>1–5, 26, 59, 61–62, 67–69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greek, Egyptian</td>
<td>41</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greek, grammar</td>
<td>42, 44, 109</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Iraq</td>
<td>4, 46</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jews</td>
<td>56, 94</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Jordan</td>
<td>4, 38, 46, 111–14, 116</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>koiné</td>
<td>9, 73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lateral</td>
<td>18, 47, 63</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>liturgy/liturgical</td>
<td>39, 42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maʕadd</td>
<td>70–73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Mecca</td>
<td>52, 76</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nabataean</td>
<td>3, 41, 46–48, 50–52, 55, 63, 112, 123</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Najd</td>
<td>26, 30, 61</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nessana</td>
<td>4, 17–18, 21, 40, 44–45, 47, 50–51, 55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>New Testament</td>
<td>45, 76, 95</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Maghreb</td>
<td>47, 58, 66</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Medina/Medinian</td>
<td>69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Melkite</td>
<td>8, 39, 94, 103, 106</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>papyri</td>
<td>2, 4–6, 18, 24, 40–41, 43, 46–50</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Petra</td>
<td>41, 45, 47, 49–50, 54–55</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Phoenician</td>
<td>17, 23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>phylarch</td>
<td>54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>prophet</td>
<td>1, 74, 75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Qaṣīdah</td>
<td>69–72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Qubbat al-Khazna</td>
<td>93–95</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>southern Levant</td>
<td>24, 54–56</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Umayyad</td>
<td>7, 49, 66, 69, 71, 93–95, 99</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ugaritic</td>
<td>16, 60</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>uncial</td>
<td>7, 36–38, 97</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sabaic</td>
<td>33, 70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Safaitic</td>
<td>4–5, 16, 27, 33–34, 41, 46, 48–52, 58, 61, 63, 79</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Samaritan</td>
<td>96, 106</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Septuagint (LXX)</td>
<td>7, 97–98, 107</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Sibawayh</td>
<td>1, 17, 26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>spoken dialect(s)</td>
<td>5, 67, 69</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
sociolinguistic, 35, 57, 67, 69, 71
substrate, 33, 39
Summa Theologiae Arabica, 39
Syria, 2, 4, 36, 41, 46–47, 66, 93–95, 117–18, 120–22
Thamudic, 63

triphthong, 2, 14, 16, 29, 32, 47–48, 60, 68, 70–71, 112
vernacular, 1, 6, 46, 56–58, 65, 73–74, 76, 109
Western Neo-Aramaic, 17
Yathrib, 52
Yemen/Yemeni, 52, 54, 58

Index of Pre-Islamic Arabic-Script Inscriptions

Dūmat al-Jandal, 38
Ḥarrān, 26, 38, 47, 50, 54, 61
Jebel Says, 27–28, 54
Najran Inscriptions, 38
Namārah, 2–4, 49, 61, 70
Zebed, 38

Modern Arabic Dialects and Languages

Cypriot, 16
Judaeo-Arabic, 11, 18, 25, 33, 37–38, 45, 49, 56
Levantine Arabic, 2, 26, 79
Maltese, 16–17, 66
Nabaṭī Arabic, 36, 46, 57
Saudi Arabic, 32–33, 52
Siculo Arabic, 9, 40–41, 43–44
Yemeni Arabic, 27, 60